





# LONG LIVE SUMMONS

BOOK 07

*Xia Fei Shuang Jia*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Long Live Summons

(召唤万岁)

by

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

(霞飞双颊)

# Synopsis

---

The Soaring Dragon Continent is a world of summons, you can only become strong if you become a summoner! Yue Yang, an average high school boy, was suddenly transported into this world. When he woke up, he was greeted with a lot of worried faces and found out that he had assumed another person's identity. Turns out he's the good-for-nothing third son of the Yue Family, who had just recently drowned himself because of a failed engagement. Unlike the third son of the Yue Family who was useless in summoning, Yue Yang succeeded in making a contract with a summoning grimoire on his first try, even when the other guy failed for the past fifteen years. Others would have a headache making contracts with beasts afterwards, but countless beasts tried to gain favour with Yue Yang instead, acting like a good kid before him.

Yue Yang the brat, however, didn't feel grateful at all: "Scram, Mythical Beasts! Do you think you are cool like that? Go away from me now, I only like beautiful summons!"

Even when royal families approached him for his talents, the shameless brat replied, "I'm not interested in government stuff, I'm only interested in beauties!"

# Copyright

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Honey, Crayon, Janet, May, Sheng, Andy, Shiro, Augere, Yunichan, Taffy, youcanbeKing, Sephilia, Zaza, Shiroyukineko, Ignis @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

Translation Edits by Khh, Rango, Krithika, Based Jessica @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 601 – Refining, Tao Tie Blade

---

The Heaven Realm Draconians knew they were no match as they tried to flee.

If Yue Yang wanted to kill these Heaven Realm Draconians, it would only take a few seconds that will not exceed a minute. But, he did not make a move and instead summoned out Hui Tai Lang from his Grimoire World, and then kicked its butt: “Chase but do not kill them. Bring them back to let out their blood, do you understand? Their bloods cannot be wasted!”

“Meow!” Hui Tai Lang quickly nodded and raised its paw, mimicking a soldier’s salute.

It opened its wings and quickly chased after a male Heaven Realm Draconians.

That Heaven Realm Draconian was not resign to getting caught so it used its strength to counterattack.

Hui Tai Lang’s tail was like a steel mace. With once fling, it had destroyed the Draconian’s backbone, and with one swipe of its claws, it ripped the Draconian’s wings apart. That person naturally howled out miserable, but Hui Tai Lang was not worried and bit his legs, flinging him towards the blood pool.

Bloody Queen Red ywned with boredom. She thought that there was a strong opponent so she happily came out. Who knew that Hui Tai Lang alone would be able to finish the task.

The Reaper Mantis was different.

Seeing that the skies were filled with Wyverns and Heaven Realm Draconians, an instinctive thirst for Dragon Blood and Dragon Cores aroused her desire to kill. She opened her wings and followed behind Hui Tai Lang. She specialized in capturing back those Heaven Realm Draconians, that were injured by Hui Tai Lang, and those fleeing Wyverns. If it was a weak Wyvern, she

would just eat their cores in mid air. Seeing their natural predator appear in Wyvern Valley, the entire Wyvern Valley was filled with fear.

The Spirit of Heaven Fire did not join the attack. She looked at the blood sucking Demonic Mirror and tried to devour it.

“Stay far away from it, this is not for you.” Yue Yang immediately shooed her away. Other treasures were fine, but this Demonic Mirror was something that could help Yue Yang evolve Hui Jin Magic Blade.

“.....” The Spirit of Heaven Fire was reluctant but she did not dare disobey Yue Yang.

She slowly floated away as she impatiently looked at Hui Jin Magic Blade, devouring the Demonic Mirror. Yue Yang had wanted to evolve the Hui Jin Magic Blade for a long time now, but he it would only level up to a Holy Weapon and this was not Yue Yang’s ideal anymore. Yue Yang wanted HUI Jin Magic Blade to become a Divine Weapon or at least a Divine Soldier!

Divine Soldiers were normally beast-shaped.

For Hui jin Magic Blade to become a Divine Soldier, it needed to be in a type of living state. Even if it was metallic life form, it would still have a life, or else he would not succeed.

Yue Yang had killed Thousand Goblin King inside the world of snow and obtained a Scarlet Demon Orb. With the Orb of the Dark Gold Specter, that the Phoenix Sisters killed, and the Orb of the Golden Shadow, he had three different types of orbs. Yue Yang prepared to purify them, to combine them with Hui Jin Magic Blade and give it life, becoming a Divine Soldier. Naturally, there needs to be many things in between them. For example, he needed large amounts of fresh blood and a living battle doll. Only this could truly level up Hui Jin Magic Blade into a Divine Soldier.

The question was, where was he going to get a living battle doll?

He did not have the resources to make another battle angel, so where was he going to find enough materials to level up his Hui Jin Magic Blade?

He had always shelved this problem until he saw the Demonic Mirror..... The Demonic Mirror was not alive but it was similar to being alive and evolve by sucking blood. Moreover, the more frightening thing was that it had intelligence. After drinking the blood of countless sacrifices, it had developed a special spirit that kept demanding for blood. From a human's point of view, the Demonic Mirror could be counted as a living creature with an extremely sinister spirit.

The other condition for refining was a huge amount of blood.

The blood pool contained the blood of hundreds of Heaven Realm Draconians and tens of thousands of Wyverns. Although the Demonic Mirror had absorbed half of it, Yue Yang predicted that killing the male Heaven Realm Draconians should be enough.

Hui Jin Magic Blade gradually merged with the Demonic Mirror so Yue Yang also threw in the three Demon Orbs.

The Blazing Core and the Demon Dragon Crystal that were originally inside Hui Jin Magic Blade had already grown. They were not on par with the three Demon Orbs but they also contained a certain might. At this time, the Demonic Mirror, three Demon Orbs, Blazing Core and the Demon Dragon Crystal were being refined by Nirvana Flames so they could not not merge together. They all had a will and were not willing to merge with others, but hey had no choice. If they did not agree to Yue Yang's will, they would forever disappear. On one side, Yue Yang was transmitting the Innate Invisible Qi and on the other was using Nirvana Flames to refine the Hui Jin Magic Blade, Demonic Mirror, three Demon Orbs and the two nucleus as they began to merge.

Yue Yang also never imagined that one day a Divine Soldier



would be born from his hands.

Even though it was only a Holy ranked Divine Soldier, it was a Divine Soldier that had not yet hit its limits. It was already enough to make Yue Yang proud!

When the Divine Soldier appeared, the entire Wyvern Valley was covered in a bloody red light.

The ground shook just like how the legends described the appearance of a Divine Soldier.

Heaven and earth had changed colors as thunderbolts danced in the skies.....blood red demonic qi surged to the skies like a Heaven Devouring Demon. Those female Heaven Realm Draconians were frightened to the point of hugging each other while trembling. They did not dare to raise their heads to look at the slowly changing uncomplete Divine Soldier in Yue Yang's hand. In their minds, there was already no doubt that their legendary founder, the Heavenly Dragon Emperor, was an ultimate ranker that had control over Divine Soldiers and commanded all under heaven, that it was a god-like existence; Otherwise, how could the Heaven Realm Draconians worship it as their founder?

The youth in front of their eyes had an unfathomable strength. He knew about the Heaven Realm Draconian's history and wielded a Divine Soldier.

Even if he was not Heavenly Dragon Emperor's reincarnation, he might be a later generation Heavenly Dragon Emperor.

The most important thing was that when the youth raised the Divine Soldier, the Tong Tian Tower Beast on his wrist let out a dragon's might..... Although they had only heard it from legends, when they saw that the Tong Tian Tower Beast, that could change into anything, they knew that he was definitely the Heavenly Dragon Emperor's disciple. This was because only the Heavenly Dragon Emperor knew how to command the Tong Tian Divine Dragon. And, the Tong Tian Tower Beast was the Tong Tian

Divine Dragon's young.

When the Tong Tian Tower Beast appeared, every Heaven Realm Draconian could feel its supreme draconic might suppressing them, making their soul tremble.

There was a resonance.

If the youth that was refining the dragon blood into a Divine Soldier did not admit that he was the Heavenly Dragon Emperor, then the owner of the Tong Tian Divine Dragon was definitely the Heavenly Dragon Emperor. The Heaven Realm Draconians did not doubt this.

“Sacred founder.....” Every female Heaven Realm Draconian kneeled down. They did not even dare let out a single gasp as they prostrated in admiration and kowtowed.

“I’m busy right now, move to one side.” The metal beast on Yue Yang’s wrist turned into a divine dragon shape, surrounding his arms. It raised its head at the Hui Jin Magic Blade, as if it was saying that even if the Hui Jin Magic Blade becomes a Divine Soldier, it couldn’t even compare to it. Of course, by doing this, it also showed how it viewed the Hui Jin Magic Blade as its rival, since the newly upgraded Hui Jin Magic Blade was truly impressive.

It had become a completely new magic blade.

In other words, it had become a new metal beast.

It was a weapon and also a beast. It carried a sinister appearance that was never before seen from the monsters of Tong Tian Tower. This was from a draconic monster that Yue Yang had seen before he was sent to this world. It long horns pointed to the sky. Its sharp fangs devoured a person. Its size was close to a lion and its hair seemed to look like spikes. At the same time, it had a tail that was full of barbs.

The blood sucking gem that was inlaid on the Demonic Mirror

had become its eyes.

The three Demon Orbs had become the magic crystal, that continuously rotated on its head without stopping.

The Blazing Core and Demon Dragon Crystal had merged together to become its heart. Its two sides were like a lion, but they were clearly made from fragments of the Demonic Mirror, as they glowed with sinister red light. Its tail was forever ignited with demonic fire and goblin fire. The world inside the Demonic Mirror had become its stomach. If it could not bite its enemy to death, it could at least swallow a hundred people. If it were to evolve again the world inside would definitely expand and become a bottomless stomach.

Actually what Yue Yang wanted the most was the interior world.

The Holy ranked Demonic Mirror was second.

With an interior world that could suck blood, it would become his enemies' nightmare..... Not only would their bodies die, their souls would forever be trapped inside. Yue Yang still wanted to wait until he becomes stronger before merging the Demon Suppressing Pagoda as well. Let alone normal Heaven Ranked warriors, even the likes of Cang Yan, Yan Zong and Yan Zun would forever be trapped.

Naturally, Yue Yang's goal was the Scarlet Emperor and the higher goal was Jiu Xiao and Xu Kong of the Heaven Realm Three Great Leaders.

If he wanted to trap them, Yue Yang felt that he needed to reach the level of the Black Hole World. He would not think about this right now, but there would be such a possibility in the future.

"You are temporarily incomplete, but I will give you a name. In the future, you will be name 'Tao Tie Blade'!" Yue Yang extended his hands as the beast instantly changed shape and wrapped Yue Yang's arm. It had tightly wrapped his arm that there were no

seams and even look like his natural skin. It could be said that it had completely become an extension of Yue Yang's arm, as if it had always been a part of Yue Yang. In its Tao Tie form, the head was the blade and the mouth, tongue and teeth were the blade edge. Yue Yang held the waist as its four limbs and tail extended, merging with the head, teeth and tongue. It had become a half-sawtoothed half-crescent heavy saber.

The other metal beast also impatiently transformed, becoming the Tong Tian Sword. It took the initiative to lightly strike the Tao Tie Blade.

The collision let out a 'ding' sound.

Although the sound was not loud, it was enough to shake the soul of others.

Lord Mo Long's helpers had been shaken that blood flowed from their seven apertures as they died. Even Lord Mo Long had his eardrums destroyed and sent coughing out blood, as if he heard Bloody Queen Red' Banshee Scream.

Yue Yang was elated and sent out a slash with his hands.

The Tao Tie Blade was chopped forwards. The mountain wall thousand of meters away suddenly had a deep scar. The scar reached 100 meters long and 10 meters deep..... En route, it had even bisected a fleeing Wyvern. Even Hui Tai Lang who had been catching male Heaven Realm Draconians was startled. The other Tong Tian Sword did not take it lying down. It took the initiative to send out a bit of sword qi and deeply penetrated another mountain wall by 100 meters.

Compared to the earth saking slash, this moved had much more destructive power.

This was the first time that the metal beast boasted like this. If it wasn't because of the Tao Tie Blade, it would never reveal its strength.

“Here’s your reward!” Yue Yang naturally understood the metal beast’s heart. He rewarded it with one of the Ancient Demon Brother’s Demon Crystal. It became so happy that it rolled around Yue Yang’s arms.

In its Tao Tie form, Yue Yang had pierced it into the blood pool, letting it absorb the energy from the fresh blood to continue evolving.

Xia Yi waited for him to finish before stealthily pulling his sleeves: “It’s fine that you saved them but why did you have to pretend to be their master? Pretending to be the Heavenly Dragon Emperor is bad, isn’t it?”

Yue Yang smiled when he heard this: “Nonsense, if I don’t pretend to be the Heavenly Dragon Emperor, would they even listen to me? Look at how obedient they are. They would even do what I say. If I did not pretend to be their founder, how would I be able to excavate their ancestral tombs?”

Xia Yi had a headache: “Murdering people is enough, yet you still want to excavate their ancestral tomb? You are too cruel, why not let it go.”

Yue Yang used his forefinger to lightly tease her chin: “If I don’t excavate their ancestral tomb, how could I inspect your Draconian bloodline? Moreover, there must be treasures inside. I had already felt it when I entered. If I don’t take it, then I would miss this opportunity!”

“I have Draconian’s bloodline?” Xia Yo was stupefied.

“Ah?” Let alone her, even Queen Qi Ge and the others who heard it were flabbergasted as they looked at Xia Yi. Only now did they notice that there was a sense of familiarity as they looked at her.

# Chapter 602 – Yue Yang's Three Great Codes

---

The Heaven Realm Draconians were all captured. They were all injured as they kneeled beside the blood pool, awaiting execution.

Hui Tai Lang's tail waved the Origin Fire Scythe, attempting to sever the arm of one of those desperately struggling. There was only one outcome for anyone who did not abide by Yue Yang – death by torture. All the men, including Prince Bo Lun who was still alive, were horrified. They all realised that their final fate was to end up as the blood sacrifice of Tao Tie Blade!

In the past, they had been the ones who massacred women by the masses as sacrifice for the Demonic Mirror. They had not felt an ounce of remorse, and only felt an animalistic freedom from inhibitions.

Now that they were the ones being sacrificed, they finally understood what this thing called pain was.

Many men were bawling in fear.

Some even defecated on the spot.

With Crescent Blade in her hand, Bloody Queen Red spat in contempt: “You all should come to an awareness. After killing so many of your comrades, how is it any strange that you have now been reduced to sacrifices? You good-for-nothings, keep kneeling, otherwise, I promise you will die an even more painful death!”

Barbarian Cow Shadow did not even spare a glance at these trashes, and merely waved her hand to instruct the women who were trembling in fear at the back to carry out the execution.

This was according to Yue Yang's orders. Before he brought Xia Yi to the ancestral tombs within the canyons, he had ordered all the women to personally kill the men led by Prince Bo Lun. Everyone had to participate, including the children. His purpose behind not killing them himself and ordering the women of the

Heaven Realm Draconians to do it was to completely eradicate their deep-rooted slave mentality. It could be said that other than Queen Qi Ge's inkling of resistance, the rest of the women of the Heaven Realm Draconians were simply slaves through and through. Even in the face of death, they would not resist..... This was truly a tragedy.

Yue Yang wanted to change them. First, he had to borrow Heavenly Dragon Emperor's name; second, he had to reverse their thinking from its fundamental roots.

Without using Heavenly Dragon Emperor's name, these women would not listen to him.

By riding on the coattails of the name of their Ancestral Founder and the contrast of the preceding events, these women had completely lost their own view, making this the best opportunity for change.

"First, we execute the greatest sinner of all – Bo Lun. As a son, he had the audacity to kill his father to usurp the throne, massacre the tribe, sinned and raped, deceived his ancestors, possess contempt for the Heavenly Emperor. May the Lord pardon him, he is guilty, execute him!" Bloody Queen waved the Whip of Agony and flogged Bo Lun's crippled body out from the crowd to the front of Queen Qi Ge. In complete seriousness, Bloody Queen said: "Queen Qi Ge, lead the execution!"

"This servant will solemnly obey the Heavenly Emperor's decree." Queen Qi Ge and the women hurriedly knelt and answered loudly.

She would not dare to neglect Yue Yang's orders by the slightest.

She did not know that Yue Yang was a fake 'Heavenly Dragon Emperor'. In fact, even if Yue Yang himself denied it, she did not dare to deny him. After all, only the legendary Ancestral Founder Heavenly Dragon Emperor possessed the Tong Tian Divine Dragon. Anything else could be faked, other than the one and only

Tong Tian Divine Dragon. Moreover, if Tong Tian Divine Dragon had not come to Wyvern Valley, who would have come to save the poor women?

Other than Heavenly Dragon Emperor, who would dare execute these noble men?

Only him, the only Founder of all Heaven Realm Draconians had this right, this power!

If Yue Yang had not received Elder Nan Gong's book, if he had not known the history of Heaven Realm Draconians from the book, he would not have pretended to be Heavenly Dragon Emperor.

Now, he is not only pretending to be Heavenly Dragon Emperor, he even intended to take a look at the Ancestral Graves of the Heaven Realm Draconians to uncover more secrets so that he could take over this 'Slave Group' formed by the women of the Heaven Realm Draconians. If obedient women like them filled in as hired thugs, Soaring Dragon Continent would be much safer. Even if Black Hell King wanted to create trouble, it would not be easy..... Also, making them his subordinates was merely the first step of his plan. There was more to come such as going up to Heaven Realm to take in more of women of the Heaven Realm Draconians. With the name of Heavenly Dragon Emperor, these free hired thugs would keep coming.

He had to make full use of such convenience.

Of course, Yue Yang would not be courteous with these free hired-thugs. Moreover, this could be considered as saving them from staying enslaved to male Heaven Realm Draconians.

"Mother, you are my mother. When you gave birth to me, you were the one who secretly hid us brothers from father. You were the one who brought us up. Mother, have you forgotten it all?" Prince Bo Lun did not want to die. He crawled up in pain and knelt before Queen Qi Ge. He started bawling to show his repentance: "I



was wrong, mother, please forgive me! It was all in a moment's folly. I was tired of being stuck in Wyvern Valley. I only made those mistakes because I was desperate to get out. Now, I realized what I have done wrong..... Mother, you have always been the kindest, can you not forgive my one mistake? Do you remember when I was young? No matter what I did wrong, you would always forgive me. You used to dote on us so much, I am still your son do you remember? Mother, are you really going to kill me heartlessly?"

"Sigh, if I only I knew things would come to this stage, I would do things all over again." Queen Qi Ge put down the dagger in her hand. With trembling hands, she caressed Prince Bo Lun's face: "I was the one who spoilt you in the past. I was the one who made you like this, I was wrong, I was wrong!"

"Mother, let me go. Ask them for forgiveness, beg them to let me go. I can do anything, I can do anything for them. I have a handsome face and a tone healthy body. I also have power. If I can live, I am willing to do anything for them." After he saw Yue Yang leaving with Xia Yi, Prince Bo Lun hoped to seduce Bloody Queen Red and Barbarian Cow Shadow.

"Meow....." Hearing all these, Hui Tai Lang could only laugh. This guy was too shameless, he even dared to seduce owner's girl? Even killing him is going easy on him, he has to be gnawed slowly to death.

"Hahaha, this is hilarious! Even at death's door, you still feel good about yourself. So what if you have some looks? Compared to owner, you are practically a pig. Queen Qi Ge, I order you to skin that shameless face off. Skin it off slowly, do it bit by bit. Also, castrate him with your own hands. This will be the punishment for even trying to challenge my owner's dignity. In this world, anyone who even tries to challenge my owner's dignity will receive the greatest punishment!" Bloody Queen first laughed loudly before issuing the order coldly, ordering Queen Qi Ge to carry out the

execution.

“Spit!” Barbarian Cow Shadow’s attitude showed the most contempt disdain.

Hui Tai Lang decided to take matter in his own hands. It would also take part in the skinning as Queen Qi Ge carries out the castration and skinning. Only then, could it vent its anger.

How could this garbage even fathom any thoughts of provoking its owner? Even pickling this garbage could not warn the world enough. Hui Tai Lang had never seen such a shameless scum. Its owner’s many formidable opponents, Black Hell King, Scarlet Emperor, Xu Kong, Jiu Xiao, not one had ever tried to touch his women. This disgusting fellow, did he really think he was any bit attractive?

Prince Bo Lun started bawling. He clinged onto Queen Qi Ge’s legs, crying for his life.

Not to mention how much Hui Tai Lang despised him, even the women and tribesmen who called him Wyvern King found his current cowardly state disgusting.

Was it not just death?

Was there a need to cry like this? Everyone felt as if they had finally seen Prince Bo Lun for who he was. He was only trash, how could he be any king? A supreme king who reigned the world should be like that guy, with a divine army at his whim, the ability to turn any undesirable situation around with a single order, the ability to behead a thousand people strong army with a single line from his mouth. That was the real king, the real master.

“All of you, scram! Otherwise, I will kill her!” Prince Bo Lun suddenly flew up and grab Queen Qi Ge’s arm. He snatched the dagger from her hands and held it up to Queen Qi Ge’s neck in a frenzy.

“I thought she was your mother?” Bloody Queen pretended not

to see anything.

“All of you retreat. It is useless to say anything now, back off further. You must know, she is one of you now. She no longer has anything to do with me. If anyone dares to step forward even one step, I will die with her.” Prince Bo Lun threatened the women and tribesmen who were ready to rush forward to save Queen Qi Ge, while trying to fan his comrades who were kneeling by the blood pool into action: “Brothers, we are all going to die. Are you all just going to do nothing and wait for death, and become blood sacrifices? We are still in the prime of our youth, why do we have to die? No matter how strong they are, it is just a few of them who are strong. As long as we work together to hold them hostage, they have nothing against us! Come quick, help me capture those sluts. If we have hostages, we can survive!”

“Really?” Without any warning, Yue Yang suddenly appeared behind Prince Bo Lun.

Prince Bo Lun turned back to see a beaming Yue Yang slowly raising his palm to slap him in the face.

He wanted to avoid it, but his body seemed to be bound by an irresistible force, and he could not move at all..... Yue Yang’s slap knocked his teeth flying. Blood and broken teeth splatted over the floor.

That dagger also fell to the floor. Just when Prince Bo Lun mustered up the last bit of strength to pick the dagger up, a foot stepped on his arm.

That foot crushed his palm into a mound of broken bones and flesh.

This, was Yue Yang’s doing.

Yue Yang smiled: “Prince Bo Lun, do you know why an idiot like you is able to hold someone hostage? It was exactly what I ordered, do you understand? I order Qi Ge to go with what you do.

Otherwise, with you intelligence, with your ability, with your so-called handsome face and fit body, you think you can hold anyone hostage with my Beasts watching? I think that everyone, after seeing your performance, will understand what is considered unforgivable, and also what is called a tiger's return to the mountain..... Anyway, I don't think I have to say any much more, everyone should know what needs to be done!"

Standing behind Yue Yang, Xia Yi who was holding onto a golden box also spat at Prince Bo Lun in anger.

To let such trash live for one more minute, to take one more breath, was wasting oxygen.

Queen Qi Ge knelt on the floor.

Leading the tribe, she bowed to Yue Yang three times. She then picked up the silver dagger from the floor and stared at Prince Bo Lun blankly. While castrating him, she said calmly: "If you still see me as your mother, then I will only kill you. I will not delay your death and torture you like this. It is a pity, you gave up the last chance the Heavenly Emperor gave you. Leaving such scum like you in this world is indeed a disaster!"

"No, have mercy, I, I know I was wrong. I really know that I have done wrong, spare me....." Prince Bo Lun's cried in pain, begging for mercy. But this time, everyone ignored him.

"You raped me fifteen times, I will cut you fifteen times in return." One woman came forth and took the dagger from Queen Qi Ge's hands. She cut down fifteen small pieces of flesh from Prince Bo Lun's body. She then passed the dagger to another woman, starting Prince Bo Lun's death of a thousand cuts. All of the Heaven Realm Draconian men started shivering in fear. Some could not take the shock and fainted onto the ground. Some were more strong-willed, and started bashing their heads on the floor, trying to end their life to escape their impending destiny.

Some even knelt before Queen Qi Ge, hoping for her to

administer the torture herself to redeem their past sins.

Queen Qi Ge wiped her tears, and raised the sharp sword high in the air: “I hope you all reincarnate to become good persons. Never be scums that are despise by the world anymore! A cow, horse, pig, dog, any animal is above you all!”

With that, each of them was beheaded.

Hui Tai Lang had a little objection, and barked in ridicule.

Hui Tai Lang hope that everyone would stop using dogs negatively. At least from its point of view, he was proud of being a dog.

“Throw away his face after skinning it. There is no need to show me.” Yue Yang was not interested in seeing Prince Bo Lun’s skinned face. After seeing all of the female Heaven Realm Draconians participate in the execution, he waved his hand and acted solemnly to issue the second ‘Heavenly Dragon Emperor’ decree: “From today on, all women of Heaven Realm Draconians have to follow the Three Great Codes. First, women of Heaven Realm Draconians have to protect their own tribe to ensure its survival. Second, while abiding by the first law, women of Heaven Realm Draconians have to ensure their own safety. Third, other than I, the Emperor, the women of Heaven Realm Draconians are not slaves of anyone. Any woman of the Heaven Realm Draconians who enslaves themselves, will be considered as violating these laws. These women, will be killed with no mercy!”

# Chapter 603 – Not Surrendering? Beat Him Up!

---

The three great codes that Yue Yang set were only wills in the meantime.

Unless he possess a half god's power or the power of god that only exist in legends, his words would not carry the weight of a Code. With regards to the power of the Code, Yue Yang could only control a small part of it with the help of the Destiny Code Power that was sealed within the Destiny Card. It was not the will from within him. He was still very far from that level.

Of course, if he continued to cultivate, Yue Yang would definitely be able to use his own will to create the power of the Code in the future.

“Your Highness.” After Queen Qi Ge paid respects to Yue Yang, she suddenly bowed in respect to Xia Yi too. Her way of addressing caused Xia Yi to jump in shock.

“No, no, I'm not a 'Highness'.” Xia Yi shook her hands in panic as she gazed pitifully at Yue Yang for help. She hoped that he would explain their relationship clearly, she didn't want a bunch of Innates kneeling on the ground, respectfully addressing her with 'Your Highness'.

“You are a 'Highness'. The founder's blood is in your body. Amongst the Heaven Realm Draconians, those who had the founder's blood are nobles and kings. Although all this time only males could inherit the blood, the founder's blood is definitely within your Highness's body. Furthermore, inside your body, the founder's blood is even thicker and purer than most of the males here, it is even purer than the Wyvern King's blood thousands of years ago!” Queen Qi Ge regarded Xia Yi as Her Highness Holy Princess. When Xia Yi comes of age, she planned to enthrone her as the new ruler, Holy Blood Queen.

“Ah...” Xia Yi wanted to faint. She was obviously a human girl. How could she be related to the Draconians’ Holy Princess or Holy Blood Queen?

“It is indeed so.” Yue Yang nodded, confirming Queen Qi Ge’s words.

“When the Heaven Realm destroyed the passageway to Heaven Realm and closed the Heaven Realm’s gate, we, Heaven Realm Draconians, lost hope to return to our homeland, so we split into two branches. One branch hoped to unite with humans to create a new homeland and they were led by the previous Holy Princess who inherited the founder’s blood. They then connected with humans through marriage with human Innates. The other branch was our ancestors, who were determined to open the Heaven Realm passageway, and return to the Heaven Realm through the Heaven Stairway. That time we were the bigger group, our numbers made up a whole army of more than 10,000 people. The Holy Princess, on the other hand, was only left with a few hundreds of her personal guards.” Queen Qi Ge explained to Xia Yi, “Your Highness, you are the Holy Princess’ descendant. Furthermore, the blood in your body is extremely pure. Among our races, other than you, only Her Highness Holy Princess possessed such a pure Founder’s Blood.”

“But my mother is just an ordinary person, she is not Her Highness Holy Princess! Furthermore, I’ve never known anyone called Holy Princess before!” Xia Yi was extremely confused. She looked at Yue Yang, hoping that he had some kind of explanation.

“This is an ancient secret.” Yue Yang smiled slightly.

Actually, if Yue Yang hadn’t excavated the ancestral tomb in Wyvern Valley and receive the information about the records from the ancestral box in Xia Yi’s hands, he wouldn’t have found out so many secrets about the Heaven Realm Draconians. He excavated the tomb because he wanted to know more about the internal truths. By pretending to be the Dragon Emperor, he would have

more persuasive power. It was really as Yue Yang had planned. Those old people who had died in the Wyvern Valley, the previous generations Wyvern Kings, they had indeed recorded the truth within the tomb.

Since it was that way, Yue Yang had an even stronger persuasive power.

Yue Yang gestured for Xia Yi to come over and gave her the golden box that contained generations of Wyvern Kings' ashes and the history records: "Actually, your ancestors were not a natural race. They were a kind of man made human or man made organism. When the previous Heavenly Dragon Emperor conquered Heaven Realm before, he had many loyal subjects. Some of them lived until the end, some of the them died during the battle... In order to reward his subordinates' loyalty and also to recognize their meritorious deed, Heavenly Dragon Emperor created a man made human using his deceased subordinates' blood, treating them as their descendants."

"So that was what happened." A lot of people didn't know about the truth, only Queen Qi Ge heard about it before.

"Those first generation Heaven Realm Draconians who didn't have parents were extremely lonely as they didn't have the company of their loved ones. They begged the previous Heavenly Dragon Emperor to create some female counterparts to become their lifelong companions. Hence, the female counterpart of the Heaven Realm Draconian was created. However, as the Draconians were initially created to be males, the female counterparts were more like males, in another words, they were not pretty enough. The original Heaven Realm Draconians, no matter male or female, were very loyal towards their love relationship. They hold their lifelong partners in high esteem, and their love was unchanging until they die." The history that Yue Yang was speaking was actually the information he had gotten from the golden box, that was the record passed down since the ancient times. There were



many historical records of the various past generations of the Heaven Realm Draconians.

“Afterwards, how did the race deteriorate?” Xia Yi didn’t understand.

“The first few generations of the Heaven Realm Draconians lived more happily, and they were also much stronger. The weakest ones were at least Heaven Rank Level 1 and above. In the later generations, as their numbers grew and they became a society, monarchy was established. Then, they started comparing who possessed the most superior blood. Males who possessed the blood, that the previous generation Heavenly Dragon Emperor had rewarded them, were especially strong, clever and talented. The blood of females, on the other hand, started to get thinner and less superior. Due to this, they respected the males greatly and slowly, their society become patriarchal, where males were regarded as superior to females. Actually, the first generation of Heaven Realm Draconians were born equal, no matter if they are male or female. They lived lovingly together as one, and they definitely didn’t have any thoughts of males being superior to females.” The reason why Yue Yang said this was because he wanted to change the deep-rooted belief that females were inferior to males.

“That’s very good, we have to inform more female Draconians about this .” Xia Yi happily clapper her hands.

“Yes, we obey Holy Emperor’s and Her Highness’s command.” Queen Qi Ge and the others knelt again.

“Quickly rise!” Xia Yi panicked. Why did these women kneel down to every little thing?

“The reason why the previous Heavenly Dragon Emperor created the male Heaven Realm Draconians was to remember his loyal subordinates. He created them so that his subordinates had descendants. He created female Heaven Realm Draconians so that their kind could multiply, it was definitely not because he wanted

to give the male Heaven Realm Draconians female slaves! Hence, you all should contribute your powers to fix this mistake. Xia Yi will guide you all and release even more female slaves. You guys are all lives created equally by the Heavenly Dragon Emperor, you must not be disrespectful to him.” Yue Yang used the previous generation Heavenly Dragon Emperor as an excuse to make these women do something for him.

“You want me to lead them?” Xia Yi almost fainted when she heard him. She didn’t know anything about leading armies and fighting wars!

“Listen to me, you will definitely be okay. I will be there for you!” Yue Yang patted her shoulders lightly.

“Alright!” Xia Yi also needed a reason to stay at his side. Otherwise, being a single woman, how could she follow a guy all day round? Right now, she had an excuse as she was helping him with something.

She suddenly remembered something, which was related to her blood.

That Holy Princess’ descendant thing, she was definitely not one! Why did Queen Qi Ge think that she was?

Xia Yi actually wanted to ask afterwards, but it was like Yue Yang read her thoughts. He said: “Actually you are just a normal human girl, but that Heaven Realm Draconian Holy Princess had actually channelled all her blood energy into your body, become the sole inheritor. Only you have it while your brothers don’t. But, they still have a tiny bit of the blood inheritance because your parents should be the marriage of a human Innate and a female Heaven Realm Draconian. Otherwise, Her Highness Holy Princess would not even give you her blood.....”

After thinking for a long time, Xia Yi finally started to accept this reality, then, she started feeling a little inferior.

Could it be that the reason she wasn't beautiful was because she possessed the Heaven Realm Draconian blood?

Although Xia Yi was a girl, glancing through the crowd, she couldn't find any beautiful female Heaven Realm Draconian.

These women weren't ugly per se. Actually, all their features were okay, if they were seen separately, their features looked nice. However, when these features were mixed together, the result was barely average, Xia Yi couldn't see them as beautiful at all.

Their bodies were also a little taller.

Even the youngest female was more than 2 meters tall. Furthermore, their muscles were bigger, not lean like a female's. Their skin didn't have the white satiny feel of a human female, instead, they were coarse and black, as if they were exposed to the sun for a long time. When Xia Yi saw these female Heaven Realm Draconians, she could only sigh. No wonder they all feel inferior. Even she, whose chest was a little small, felt extremely inferior about it. If she were to look like these Heaven Realm Draconian females, she would probably not dare to walk out of her house.

"You think having looks can feed you? Your abilities are more important!" When Yue Yang saw Xia Yi's unconfident look, he comforted her: "Actually, I like to eat apples too."

"..." Xia Yi blushed, she was so embarrassed that she didn't dare to lift up her head.

Looks were not important? Then why would this brat have so many beauties on his side. Furthermore, each of them were even more sexy than the other, each of them had bigger breasts than the others!

Of course, she didn't dare to refute him, afraid that Yue Yang would tease her again. If there were only the two of them, she wouldn't mind, but Bloody Queen Red and Ah Man were also there. Xia Yi really couldn't put down her pride. She knew that

Red and Ah Man were both his Guardian Beasts, but in her eyes, these two were women, not beasts.

After the Tao Tie Blade finished absorbing the blood, Yue Yang ordered Queen Qi Ge to command the Draconians to clean up everything. Yue Yang then tried to make a contract with the Wyverns in the valley.

Queen Qi Ge understood that this new Heavenly Dragon Emperor wanted to bring her people out of this place, hence she was very happy.

Freedom was the dream that she and her people had dreamt of for thousands of years.

“We wouldn’t be able to bring them out with grimoires. There are seals on their bodies. Although you have the Tao Tie Blade, the dimension inside the Tao Tie Blade couldn’t fit 300 people.” Lord Mo Long suddenly stood up from the ground and bowed towards Yue Yang: “If third young master is willing, I’m willing to ask my Lord to use the Holy Artifact ‘Space Cradle’ to extract all these Heaven Realm Draconians out. As long as third young master and my Lord can work together, this is definitely possible.”

“I don’t need that at all...” Yue Yang pulled out the Tao Tie Blade which was shining with a red light and smiled: “I am the master of the Heaven Stairway. The previous Heaven Stairway warriors’ seal is nothing to me.”

“Pu!” Lord Mo Long almost puked blood. This brat faked too many identities! He had not even finished talking about his identity as the Heavenly Dragon Emperor, he still had the gall to say he was the master of the Heaven Stairway?

“You are the master of Heaven Stairway?” Xia Yi tugged at Yue Yang’s sleeves cutely, expressing her suspicions.

“Bullshit, if it is not me, then who?” Yue Yang boasted shamelessly.

“Cough cough, third young master, you are already the new generation of Prison Emperor. You are the strongest and noblest Prison Emperor of the Soaring Dragon Continent, you can’t be the master of Heaven Stairway too right? Furthermore, it was said that only females could become the master of the Heaven Stairway.” Lord Mo Long was almost defeated by Yue Yang’s shamelessness.

“My fiancée Yi Nan is Heaven Stairway’s number one successor. She would listen to everything I say, so why wouldn’t I be the master of Heaven Stairway? What’s more, I have obtained the previous master’s blood inheritance. If I am not the master of Heaven Stairway, then is it Black Hell King?” Yue Yang boldly and confidently used his cunning logic to say that he would sooner or later be the master of Heaven Stairway.

“Please pretend I didn’t say anything. Third Young Master, killing Mo Long is easy, but wishing for Mo Long to admit defeat is hard.” Lord Mo Long expressed that he would rather die than submit.

“I also hoped that you would surrender. No problem. You can be my war prisoner. In any case the Abyss Manatees are my captives, so having one more is not a problem.” Yue Yang waved his hands, and Hui Tai Lang pounced on Lord Mo Long, beating him up.

Since it was just a captive, then Hui Tai Lang would not be polite.

# Chapter 604 – Return To Heaven Realm

---

Soaring Dragon Continent, Da Xia Palace.

The shocking news that Heaven Realm Draconian's Queen Qi Ge leading more than three hundred of her tribesmen, all of them Innates, to pay a visit to the emperor of Da Xia Empire, Jun Wu You, caused a sensation to the entire Tong Tian Tower. Putting a figure to it, she had brought more than three hundred Innates. None of the superpowers in Tong Tian Tower could compare to that. Even the Winged Clan of Guang Ming Continent, Underworld Clan of Hei An Continent, or Eastern Goblin Tribe, who were known for being the strongest in the whole of Tong Tian Tower could not compare to these Heaven Realm Draconians who emerged from nowhere..... As implied through the name, the Heaven Realm Draconians definitely came from Heaven Realm. Almost everyone guessed that they were comrades that the Yue Clan's Third Young Master had brought over from Heaven Realm.

Some people even felt that the Heaven Realm Draconians had been tricked here by Yue Yang using the pretty boy tactic.

There was actually ample evidence to back that theory up since all of the Heaven Realm Draconians were female, and they were not that pretty.

Yue Clan's Third Young Master's power over women had long been recognised by the entire Tong Tian Tower. Even though each tribe had different beauty standards, if anyone were to ask who was the most attractive man in all of Tong Tian Tower, the answer would always be the same.

All women would definitely answer with the Yue Clan's Third Young Master.

This could not be helped. After all, power was also a charm!

"You do not have to be so courteous, Queen Qi Ge..... Your

Highness Xia Yi, please take a seat.” Seeing that Queen Qi Ge did not dare take a seat in front of Yue Yang, Jun Wu You gave Elder Yue Hai a look to take Yue Yang out of the room. If these Innates do not take a seat, these bunch of old men would all have to stand while talking. The tribe women that Queen Qi Ge had brought were all Yue Yang’s slaves indeed, but nonetheless they were still all Innates. In Tong Tian Tower, power speaks. Even though these women were of lower status than them, but nonetheless they were still more than three hundred Innates!

They would all be considered Heavenly Imperial Guardian level by Tong Tian Tower’s Innate Alliance.

Now, they actually did not dare sit in front of Yue Yang.

If outsiders were to see this, they would mistake that it was them old men who were disrespecting the Innates.

Elder Yue Hai coughed lightly. He waved his arm behind him, hinting at the younger ones standing behind to bring Yue Yang away. Yue Yu, the sharpest of them all, understood immediately and went forth immediately: “Xiao San, Shuang’er missed you so much. Also, Fourth Mother made you new clothes. Go and try them to see if they fit!”

Seeing Yue Yu bringing Yue Yang away, Xia Yi was suddenly at a loss on what to do. In her state of panic, she too wanted to leave with him.

But at the same time, she was afraid of being laughed at. She was really at a loss.

Jun Wu You and the cunning Old Fox these old men actually understood, how could they not? They were just too embarrassed to say anything. The Empress rushed forth, and quickly greeted Queen Qi Ge before enthusiastically pulling on Xia Yi’s small hand: “Your Highness, do not worry. Third Young Master has only left for a short while. Your Highness, if you wish you could also move to Rear Hall to sip on tea.”

“No, I am not her Highness, call me Xia Yi instead!” Xia Yi waved her hand in embarrassment. But seeing everyone insisting on addressing her by her Highness, she could only accept it.

“We thank Da Xia Emperor.” After sending Yue Yang and Xia Yi off, Queen Qi Ge greeted everyone and took a seat.

Seeing her sit, the old men finally heaved a sigh of relief.

Man! Yue Yang this lad was a true conman. The last time he brought two Abyss Manatees, this time he outdid himself and brought back hundreds of Heaven Realm Draconian. Even thinking of ways to cover up for him had become burdensome for everyone. Of course, such gains was welcomed by all, including Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the masters of each household.

Only with these hundreds of female Heaven Realm Draconian would Soaring Dragon Continent be safe.

Naturally, Jun Wu You could not treat these women as slaves like how Yue Yang does. He was already content with being on par with Queen Qi Ge. Moreover, to have Queen Qi Ge’s Level Seven Innates greet him out of respect due to being Yue Yang’s elder, he was already more than delighted.

Yue Yang was not concerned with what Queen Qi Ge and Jun Wu You were discussing.

He had no interest in politics.

Anyway, he did not have to care.

No matter what trouble, as long as Yue Yang decided to do it, Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and Old Fox would all do their best to help him.

After meeting Fourth Mother, Yue Yang returned to the flower garden with the little girl in his arms.

Other than Yi Nan and Sickly Beauty, the others have all went to cultivate with Zhi Zun and Night Empress.



The reason why Yi Nan stayed behind was because she trained differently from the others.

Not only was it Yue Yang's decision to bring this girl to play in Heaven Realm, he had to make up to her all the sweet affection that had been delayed by all those battles that happened one after another. Originally Yue Yang had intended to bring Princess Qian Qian, Xue Wu Xia and Luo Hua City Mistress along, but Night Empress would not allow it. She felt that what the girls needed was cultivation, not love. Without Yue Yang by their side, they had improved by leaps and bounds. This was why Night Empress had personally asked Princess Qian Qian to bring them away.

Not to mention them, even Phoenix Fairy Beauty was brought away by Zhi Zun.

Since Phoenix Fairy Beauty was almost going to break through Heaven Rank Level Three, Zhi Zun decided to guide this younger sister personally..... After the battles at Death Arena and Heaven Realm, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had become aware of the difference between herself and her elder sister and started to reflect upon her past willfulness.

Although Phoenix Fairy Beauty had not been able to apologise to Zhi Zun, her willingness to accept her elder sister's training was a sign of admitting her mistake.

Sickly Beauty seemed to have stayed back to learn from Fourth Mother, but she was unwilling to tell Yue Yang exactly what knowledge she was acquiring.

Maybe, it was Fourth Mother who did not want Yue Yang to know her secret.

Other than when Yue Yang was researching battle dolls, Yue Yu would not spend time with Yue Yang alone. Recently, she would only hide a far distance away from him. Even when they met, she would only display the airs of an elder sister. Yue Yu did not want to follow Yue Yang to explore Heaven Realm. On the other hand,

what Yue Bing hoped for the most was to train with her elder brother. Despite the numerous hints Yue Yu dropped, Yue Bing would still puzzledly ask: “Why can I not go when Sister Yi Nan gets to go?”

Yue Yu could not answer this question.

“Oh, if you tag along, you will become the lightbulb your elder brother always speaks of.....” Before Fatty Hai could complete his sentence, Ye Kong already sent him flying with a kick: “Pig head, don’t taint Bing’er, scram to the side!”

“You can go, but that would mean your elder brother would have to protect two people. But if you don’t go, he would only have to protect Yi Nan, which would be much easier for him. Next time, ask him to bring you along again. Since he has the Three Realms Compass, he could go anytime. Wait for your elder brother to become stronger. Then, not only could he bring you, he could bring us all too.” With Liu Ye’s explanation, Yue Bing’s intention to go was dispelled.

“Oh, is that the case. I thought that it was because my level was not high enough to go to Heaven Realm.” Little Yue Bing’s heart was so pure, she did not overthink. She was only aware that her elder brother was closest to her, how would she know that her presence would disturb her elder brother and Yi Nan’s intimate time together. She grasped her fist and nodded her head energetically: “I will definitely work hard to become more powerful and not be elder brother’s burden. Train, train hard!”

Staring at Yue Bing’s back as she ran off to diligently train, Fatty Hai’s tears streamed down his face: “She has already surpassed me.....”

Ye Kong poked Fatty Hai: “Dumb Fatty, if she was not trying to save our face, she would long have entered Innate Realm. What are you still doing here? Go train quickly, don’t you have any shame at being stuck at Lesser Innate Level for so long? If I were you, I

would long have hit my head and killed myself. Are you that dumb? Your improvement this time has been zilch!”

Fatty Hai was furious: “Monkey, you too are a Lesser Innate. If you can, show me how you can breakthrough Innate today?”

Xue Tan Lang, who had been silent this entire time, suddenly piped up: “You two are indeed trash, I am considering if I should break off all ties with you two. Being friends with such trash is truly embarrassing.”

“You!” Fatty Hai nearly choked in anger. But he could not retaliate since Xue Tan Lang had already reached Innate before them, and could say anything he wanted.

“Dumb Fatty, come train!” Ye Kong was also seething with anger. While he clearly knew that Xue Tan Lang was testing them psychologically, but nonetheless, he could not stand it. Actually, he and Fatty Hai already had ability above Innate Level One. But the more anxious they were, the more they were stuck before Innate Realm and could not breakthrough. Since Yue Yang had been too busy to guide them, their cultivation had become stagnant. Not only so, they were also competitive and did not want to rely entirely on Yue Yang’s guidance and breakthrough with their own ability instead.....

When Yue Yu came to bring the little girl away, Yi Nan was bouncing in excitement.

A world for two people!

A world of only her and Yue Yang that she has been longing for, it was finally here.

Actually, she did not care whether they went to Heaven Realm. As long as she was with Yue Yang on a romantic date, it did not matter wherever they went. Turns out her dating plans with Yue Yang was to go to Heaven Stairway to trace the ancestry. Since Yue Yang was not in a hurry to explore Heaven Stairway now, there

was also no rush to explore God's Ruins.

With the Three Realm Compass, the place Yue Yang wanted to explore the most was Heaven Realm.

Since Thousand Goblin King is dead, and the other clone did not make any moves, there was no need to take action for now. Black Hell king was also in hiding and would not let Yue Yang seize any chances easily. Scarlet Emperor had also escaped to Heaven Realm, so Yue Yang could only go up to Heaven Realm to seek for news. Scarier than Scarlet Emperor was Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao, who were gradually recovering little by little. Back then, Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao were the Heaven Realm Great Leaders who fought against the Prison Emperor.

No matter what, Yue Yang wanted to go up to Heaven Realm to take a look. To know yourself and know your enemy was the most important.

Exploring, widening one's horizons and at the same time picking girls up, what could be better in this world? Yue Yang had been wanting to play with Little Sister Yi Nan for a long time, but he had not had the chance too. Now, the alone time he had been longing for with Nan Yi was finally here. Without Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia, without Sick Beauty and Luo Hua City Mistress around, during this romantic Heaven Realm journey, Yue Yang would secretly push Yi Nan down..... This was Yue Yang's great wish and was also the fruits of love that was to be expected. To have to look for Xia Yi previously was a slight waste of time. Fortunately, they reaped the harvest of saving the Heaven Realm Draconians.

"I am so nervous, what clothes should I wear. Right, prepare some bags, I have to bring some Heaven Realm specialties back for everyone as gifts." Yi Nan was twirling in excitement.

"Don't bring too many things, actually forget it, do what you wish!" Yue Yang gently caressed her small face.

The first close female friend he met was Yi Nan, she was also the first to be engaged to him. But the time he spent with her was the least.

This time, no matter what, he had to properly make it up to her. He had to give her the most romantic Heaven Realm journey, the most most most romantic honeymoon..... Yue Yang bent down to kiss Yi Nan gently. This time, she did not reject him. She only bowed her head, and ran off bashfully and continued packing. Even if Fourth Mother and Yue Yu had long finished packing for her, she could not resist checking once more in fear of missing anything out.

With everything prepared, Yue Yang bid everyone farewell and activated the Three Realm Compass once more.

Return to Heaven Realm.

The destination, was the mechanical battle doll he had buried below God's Statue.

Heaven Realm, and the Heaven Realm of six thousand years ago, what had changed? The mysterious Heaven Realm, what were its true colours? This, Yue Yang believed, he would properly understand after stepping into Heaven Realm.

When Yue Yang stepped onto Heaven Realm's grounds, he recalled the fierce battle of that day. He could not help but sigh: "Heaven Realm, I am here....."

# Chapter 605 – What! You Have A Summoning Grimoire?

---

Heaven Realm, was much bigger than what Yue Yang imagined.

Even though Yue Yang had always heard about how boundless and vast Heaven Realm was, he never never could have imagined that Heaven Realm was this big.

To a normal person, Soaring Dragon Continent was already considered huge. Excluding the oceans and the areas that no one lived in, Soaring Dragon Continent still contained three big countries and more than ten small ones. To walk from the east to the west of Soaring Dragon Continent, one would need a hundred years. Even birds that migrate long distance would need a few months to cover that distance.

But compared to Tong Tian Tower, Soaring Dragon Continent was an extremely tiny place.

To draw a comparison, Soaring Dragon Continent would be equivalent to putting a grain of rice in White Stone City. That was the difference.

Tong Tian Tower's first floor was not considered big. It only contained Soaring Dragon Continent, the Demon Abyss, and Heaven Stairway these three continents. But the higher up you go, the space expands by more than ten times. Combined with continents similar to the size of Soaring Dragon Continent and the Abyss, that are connected by teleportation circles and also the different dimensional space between floors, the size of Tong Tian Tower was bigger than anyone can imagine..... In the map of the entire Tong Tian Tower, you would not even be able to find Soaring Dragon Continent. On a map of the 8th Floor and below, Soaring Dragon Continent was no bigger than a grain of sesame.

Even Tong Tian Tower's first floor that contained Soaring

Dragon Continent, the Abyss, and Heaven Stairway would only appear as big as a grain of sesame on the map of the entire Tong Tian Tower.

However, the humongous Tong Tian Tower could not even compare to Heaven Realm.

“God damn it!” Yue Yang had bought an atlas that was thicker than Cihai. According to the shopkeeper, this atlas was the easiest atlas of Heaven Realm to understand. The real map of Heaven Realm was said to be as big as one square kilometer, a hundred meters tall, and had one million pages. Only after buying this atlas, Yue Yang realised that Heaven Realm was divided into ‘Upper Heaven Realm’ and ‘Lower Heaven Realm’.

Upper Heaven Realm, could only be entered by those with Heaven Rank strength.

The simplified atlas did not contain any information, but the shop owner whose mouth was larger than a toad’s had briefly told them. He told them that Heaven Realm was at the central region of Four Great God’s Realm and Central God’s Realm. The criteria for entering was very strict. First, one had to own a Grimoire. Second, one had to be at Heaven Rank. Without fulfilling these two conditions, it was impossible to become a Lord in Upper Heaven Realm, it was impossible to settle down in Upper Heaven Realm. Of course, if one were to enter for work as a mercenary or as someone with a peculiar ability, if a Lord was willing to be the guarantor, one could stay for a maximum of three months and could also obtain a visa.....

“I would like to know, how far is this place from West Heaven Realm?” Yue Yang had flown for three days and three nights from the Ancient Battlefield Ruins, but had not yet reached the edge. Fortunately, he found a discarded teleportation circle and went straight in. He did not know where he teleported to, and only after searching through the forest for half a day did he find this small town. Now, even though he bought a map and was holding onto a

simplified atlas that was as thick as Cihai, Yue Yang still could not find where West Heaven Realm was.

“West Heaven Realm?” The big-mouthed shop owner was suddenly troubled. Grabbing its thinning hair with its hand, it was going to turn bald. It suddenly remembered: “This is North Heaven Realm, how far is here from West Heaven Realm exactly? This is a headache, I cannot calculate it! However, I remember a very ancient tale. It was said that in the past, there was a group of very persistent lunatics, they swore that they were going to complete the unprecedented feat of flying from the most Eastern side of East Heaven Realm to the most western side of West Heaven Realm, in the end.....”

“They failed?” Yue Yang also thought that flying was too difficult, teleportation would be more like it.

“No, they made it. More precisely, their great-great-great-grandchildren fulfilled their dying wish. They had taken a hundred thousand years to fly from the most Eastern side of East Heaven Realm to the most Western side of West Heaven Realm.” Big-mouth shop owner answered.

“Pfft!” Yue Yang spat out the water he was drinking.

“In fact, they were the Lightning Swallow Tribe that were already the most proficient at flying. If it was another tribe, even a hundred thousand years would not be enough.” Big-mouth shop owner was sure about that.

“What about using teleportation?” Yue Yang felt that only a fool would choose to fly.

“If you do not rest in between, and teleport from one teleportation circle to another continuously along the best teleportation route, it would take about one month to go through more than ten thousand teleportation circles. If you take a short break in between or have to queue, you would take at least three months. Half a year would be the safest estimate. Many merchants



who travel such distances take a year for their trips.” Big-mouth shop owner continued to say that he too used to take such trips. But the teleportation fee was really too expensive that his profits were so meagre that he gave up.

“.....” Yue Yang was very speechless.

“To be honest, there are super-teleportation circles that span extremely long distances, but only Heaven Rank Innates can use them. Those can bring you to Western Heaven Realm in a week. There are also ultra-teleportation circles that can bring you there in a day, but only rankers above Heaven Rank Level 5 can use them. Not to mention these Heaven Rank Level 5 are all in Upper Heaven Realm, there are almost none in Lower Heaven Realm.” Seeing Yue Yang giving out more crystal carefreely, big-mouth shop owner rambled on enthusiastically.

While gold coins were also used as currency in Heaven Realm, there was something different from Tong Tian Tower.

These Heaven Realm Gold Coins have a unique Heaven Rune on them. Its energy was comparable to a 6th grade crystal. Even though Yue Yang could counterfeit them, he could not bear wasting so many crystals.

Coming to this small town, Yue Yang would rather use crystal as gold coins, but he could not bear to convert them to Heaven Realm gold coins..... In his view, even though these Heaven Realm gold coins had much energy, they were practically useless to him when beasts could not absorb that energy. To him, a 6th grade crystal was much more useful. What was even more infuriating was the exchange rate of Heaven Realm gold coins to 6th grade crystals, it was ‘one to one hundred’. Not to mention the pathetic exchange rate, there was even a ten percent exchange tax.

Most ridiculous of all was that it was not possible to use gold coins to exchange back for crystals. This was what Yue Yang despised the most.

Yue Yang was definitely not one to lose out, he would not waste his crystals to exchange for those Heaven Realm gold coins that only looked good but were practically useless.

Moreover, after killing Hei Hu, Yue Yang had found a shining diamond card in Hei Yu storage bangle.

This card was Heaven Realm's most advanced service, you can travel all of Heaven Realm with one card..... There was no such service in Tong Tian Tower.

As a Central Palace water-element Elder, Hei Hu's diamond card should have many savings inside.

But Yue Yang did not dare take the card out. He was worried that if he used it, people from Central Palace would realize he was here.

That was definitely the sensible act.

After he bid the big-mouth shop owner goodbye, he came to a tiny mercenary guild. When he raised his head, he realised that at the most eye-grabbing location was a heavy bounty for him and Zhi Zun..... Central Palace had formed an alliance with a nameless organisation to offer a reward for Yue Yang and Zhi Zun. Yue Yang's bounty was 100 million. Yue Yang was not surprised by this number for himself, but the fact that Zhi Zun's bounty actually reached one billion completely stunned Yue Yang.

One billion?

While terrifying, Zhi Zun's bounty was only at Rank 999 among the ranks of all the bounty of Heaven Realm rankers,. It barely squeezed into the top 1000.

Yue Yang could not imagine what kind of perverted bounties ranked ahead of her's.

It was fortunate that Empress Fei Wen Li's bounty prepared Yue Yang for this, otherwise he would have been completely blown away.

Actually, Zhi Zun's bounty was already impressive. This bounty was the highest that had appeared in Heaven Realm these past thousand years, and her ranking had rose very quickly. Exactly so, all the mercenary guilds in Heaven Realm had made her bounty public. As for releasing Yue Yang's bounty, it was just supplementary. Yue Yang's bounty of 100 million only ranked among the millions. His bounty could not even squeeze into the ten thousands and in fact, it was far cry.

Yue Yang was very curious who were the amazing people who ranked in the top 1000.

Unfortunately, that old man from the mercenary guild said that there was a fee of 100 gold coins to inquire on anyone. And to get the whole list, Yue Yang would have to show evidence of being Heaven Rank Level 5 and pay a one hundred thousand gold coin fee.

"Isn't this a scam?" If a normal person had a hundred thousand, they would just retire and rest, who would continue to be a useless mercenary.

"Registering as mercenary? One gold coin each. Replacing with crystal? We only accept the best quality crystal, we don't want those that are bad. What is this? Wyvern's crystal? This is bad, forget it, but looking at you two, I will consider it as two goin coins. Actually these are at most worth half a gold coin....." Seeing Yue Yang and Yi Nan standing together with their hands clasped together like a picture, the old man closed an eye to it and accepted the Wyvern crystal that Yue Yang passed over.

In Tong Tian Tower, a Wyvern crystal could at least be exchanged for a few hundred gold coins, but here, it was worth less than two.

Yue Yang was going to explode from anger.

What a scam!

If he did not have to obtain the identity of a sect disciple or a freedom mercenary to use the teleportation circles, Yue Yang would not even waste his crystal.

“Thank you old man!” Yi Nan had been idle within the Grimoire World for several days. Now that she was finally out, she was delighted and beaming from ear to ear.

“What? I have just reached adulthood today, this long beard is just a symbol of my maturity alright!” To hear the old man say that he had only just reached adulthood, Yue Yang and Yi Nan were extremely speechless.

“Sorry..... I did not know, please forgive me.” Yi Nan quickly apologized to smoothen the process of registering as mercenary.

“Since you are so sincere about apologizing, I will just forgive you.” At the sight of this prematurely aged ‘old man’ waving his hand in dismissal, Yue Yang was close to pulling out Tao Tie Blade to get rid of him. He only pulled himself back when Yi Nan grabbed his hand. This was a honeymoon trip, not a killing trip. She did not want blood to pave the streets. Seeing his girl happy, Yue Yang did not want to spoil her good mood. The ‘old man’ took out pen and paper, instructed the card-maker and inquired: “What is your name? Yi Si? Just two words? Seems like you are not royalty. Alright, your race? Human? Oh, you are human, you look so strange! Sex, female? You are female? Do human women all look like you? To speak the truth, you do not look that good.....”

“You frick!” Yue Yang was furious, registering was one thing, but to make such comments, did you think you are the expert at asking to be beaten up?

“It’s nothing, nothing, his temper is bad.” Yi Nan quickly snatched over the brick in Yue Yang’s hands. That brick, was a hair’s breadth away from landing on the ‘old man’s’ head.

“You two have never registered before, so you would be Level One Mercenaries with very meager strength. Although I bet you

will not have it, but I will just follow protocol and ask you.” That annoying ‘old man’ casually asked: “Do you have, oh, do you have a summoning grimoire, do you have a summoning grimoire? Forget it, pretend I never asked. I bet you two don’t have one. I’ll stop asking, to not make you two feel bad!”

“Who says that we don’t, I have!” Now, even Yi Nan was triggered by this ‘old man’s’ attitude. At first, she did not want to say that she had a summoning grimoire to stay away from the limelight. But this ‘old man’ was too infuriating for her to stay quiet, she had one!

“What?” That old man looked as if he was struck by lightning, and stood stunned. It was as if he had turned into a wooden doll and his jaw almost fell to his feet.

“You really have a grimoire, you really have a summoning grimoire?” Old man returned to his senses and quickly asked. His words fell like a bomb inside mercenary guild, causing a ruckus among everyone.

First, it was those mercenaries drinking in the corner talking softly who fell off their stools.

Everyone was in a complete mess, a pathetic state.

The bartender, who was pouring drinks, also blankly poured alcohol on the heads of those mercenaries who were holding their cups out.

And those mercenaries themselves did not realise anything, they could only stare at Yi Nan stunned. Their stunned looks were as if they had seen a monster.....

# Chapter 606 – Silver Grimoire VS Platinum Grimoire?

---

The entire mercenary guild started falling into a state of chaos.

Numerous people scrambled over, surrounding Yue Yang and Yi Nan. A bearded mercenary uncle, a white and fat bartender, a drunkard who was covered in alcohol, a card dealer whose head was sharp like a grasshopper, and a receptionist who has aged prematurely..... the crowd was several layers thick, no one could pass through. If not for Yue Yang protecting her, Yi Nan would have been scared stiff. Who knows, she might even have summoned her Grimoire and attacked the crowd with her Hallucination Butterflies.

“Scram, what do you all want?” Yue Yang knew he had gotten into trouble. Even though he knew that it was very hard for Heaven Realm rankers to contract a grimoire, he never would have expected such an intense response.

If only he had just asked the big-mouth shop owner one more question, such a mistake would not have happened.

In Heaven Realm, excluding life without intelligence and those special life forms, even for intelligent life, the odds of contracting a Grimoire was one in a billion. In the Hua Xia Tian Dynasty, that Yue Yang lived in before he was sent to a different world, there were so many people but there were only at most two grimoires in the entire continent. In total, there should only be 6-7 grimoires in the entire planet. Naturally, people would go crazy over it. This was why when these mercenaries heard that this human young lady owned a Summoning Grimoire, everyone could not contain themselves.

In Heaven Realm, those who owned Summoning Grimoires are called God’s Favorite.

Each sect scramble over themselves to take them in.

As for Yue Yang's question, the 'old man' who aged prematurely could only keep smiling with all the muscles in his face: "Cough, we, we were all blind, cough, we have no intention to offend you two! We just want to take a look and see a Grimoire for ourselves. I am so unfortunate to have lived for more than 200 years, half my lifetime, but never seen a Grimoire before. Young lady, could you summon it out, to let us all take a look?"

"Yes, yes!" Everyone echoed in agreement.

All of them forced a smile on their faces to seem friendly. But, with such crazy expressions on their ugly appearances, they looked more like robbers who were about to rob them.

Seeing everyone in the crowd turn pale from fear, Yi Nan held onto Yue Yang's arm firmly.

Yue Yang shouted loudly: "Get away, who cares if you all have never seen it before. Stop surrounding us, if not don't blame me if I start hurting people!"

Everyone stared at each other. On one hand they were apologetic for having scared Yi Nan, on the other they were also suspicious over whether Yi Nan actually had a Summoning Grimoire. Who knows, they might have heard wrong, or she could have been lying. One must know, many people had lied about owning Grimoires just to show off so that they could pretend that they were different. But at Yue Yang's rage, many people could not help but back away, and try to widen the circle up so that they could tell them the truth. They just wanted someone to speak up.

Actually, all of these people were of Innate Level and above. They were all slightly stronger than the level Yue Yang was pretending to be at and Yi Nan's current ability.

But, they were used to being in the low castes. They did not think that they were stronger than Yue Yang and Yi Nan. In fact, they

seemed more like timid commoners, and not robbers that are moved by the sight of money.

If these sorts of things were to happen in Tong Tian Tower, this would not be the case.

In Tong Tian Tower, anyone with ability was very arrogant.

But in Heaven Realm, it was an entirely different concept. Among the intelligent life, many clans were very powerful from birth. Even a normal adult man would at least be Innate Level 1, only an extremely small number of slaves were below Innate Level. However, the ability rankings in Heaven Realm and Tong Tian Tower were different. Here, if Innates do not have a Summoning Grimoire, they would not be called Innates.

They were called Earth Rank Warriors, opposite to Heaven Rank Rankers.

These Earth Rank Warriors that were strong as Innates were born with extraordinary power, but their potential was strangely small. When some of them mature, they could almost not improve at all for the rest of their life, staying stagnant.

Wishing of contracting a Summoning Grimoir was only a dream!

While a general competition would not be possible, but if it were a one-on-one battle, or to compete in growth potential, the Innates in Tong Tian Tower could completely win over warriors of the same rank in Heaven Realm.

“Plonk!” The prematurely aged old man suddenly knelt down, tears streaming down his face: “I have really not seen a Summoning Grimoire in my whole life. I don’t even have an idea of what it looks like. If I don’t see it this time, in my lifetime, I would maybe end up like my grandpa and my father who died without ever seeing a Grimoire. That would be so regretful, could you please fulfil my wish and let me take a look before I die!”

“Are you going to die soon?” Yi Nan was extremely sympathetic.



She felt that this ‘old man’ was actually quite pitiful.

“That is not actually the case. Maybe in a few hundred years!” That old man blushed, even he himself thought that his words just now was slightly exaggerated. He quickly added on: “Even though I would not be dying soon, I really have never seen a Summoning Grimoire before. Everyone here can testify!”

“Right right right, none of us have ever seen a Summoning Grimoire!”

“That’s right, that guy once boasted that he saw a Summoning Grimoire before, but he was exposed by me. Other than than big mouth shop owner who sells random goods. None of us have seen such a rare item before!”

“Let me just take one look, if we were to see a Summoning Grimoire, we will too be able to boast when drinking with others. Young lady, how about I introduce you into our Nu Jiang sect, our sect.....”. “Forget about that trashy sect of yours. Even your sect leader does not have a Summoning Grimoire, you still want to recruit her? That is not right! In my opinion, young lady you should join Waterfall City’s Tian Pu Sect. Tian Pu Sect leader is an Innate Ranker, he owns a Silver Grimoire..... What is of importance is that Tian Pu Sect leader treasures talent. If young lady is willing to join Tian Pu Sect, passing on the legacy, taking over the sect, reigning over Waterfall City is all just a matter of time. The entire crowd started talking non-stop all at once.

When they started getting agitated, they almost started fighting over their own recommendations.

Some people even ran out to the teleportation circle at the other end of town to report to their sect’s elders.

Seeing that things were not going well, Yue Yang quickly brought Yi Nan and returned to the Grimoire World. The two of them stared at each other for a long time. They were both thinking that this was really such a strange happening and started laughing

aloud.

Fortunately this was a small town, otherwise there would be much more people watching..... Yue Yang decided to ignore those guys and rest for a few hours. They would go back when everyone had left. There were two reasons why they chose not to escape by using teleportation. One, they were unfamiliar with the surroundings. Second, escaping would appear weak and might make them seem like easy targets. While Yue Yang did not care about those guys with feverish eyes, Yi Nan would definitely not want their romantic first stop on this Heaven Realm trip to be rained by blood.

Forget it, he will give his girl a romantic love!

Seeing how considerate Yue Yang was being, Yi Nan gave him a kiss in delight. When she had time, she would record this down as part of their Heaven Realm trip..... On this day, in a small town in Heaven Realm, this happened.....

Yue Yang had been flipping through that five hundred page simplified atlas for half a day.

He found out that Heaven Realm was split into four, north, south, east and west realms. Each realm was split into a hundred 'domain'. Each domain was split into a hundred 'districts'. Each district was split into a hundred 'continents'. Each continent was split into a hundred 'cities'. Each cities was spilt into a hundred 'towns'..... In Heaven Realm, not to mention a city, the administered area in even a district was much bigger than the largest capital of Soaring Dragon Continent. They were only split into towns because the population was too small.

In any case, Heaven Realm was bigger than anyone could imagine. Even though this was a simplified map, Yue Yang was dazzled by it and his head was already spinning.

After spending a few hours, he finally found the Heaven Realm Door of West Heaven Realm.

On that map, there was a tiny dot marked ‘Tong Tian Tower’.

To obtain more detailed information, he would have to buy a detailed map of the Heaven Realm door.

After a lazy nap and supper, Yue Yang felt that it was about time. No matter how patient, everyone should have already left since Yue Yang had already returned to the Grimoire World for ten whole hours.

“Let’s go!” Yi Nan changed her clothes, and gently tugged on Yue Yang’s big hands while smiling sweetly.

“Let’s register at another place, but this time, we must not mention that we have a Grimoire.” Yue Yang did not want to be surrounded in a circle by strangers anymore, that feeling was truly annoying.

But when he and Yi Nan appear, he was completely stunned.

This was because, around them were tens of thousands of people waiting for them. When they saw the two of them appear, the entire crowd erupted in cheers, their applause like a thunderstorm. Many Earth Rank Level 7, 8 powerful warriors were standing in rows like soldiers. In front of these rankers, were two Heaven Rank rankers. As for those people who were here from the start, such as prematurely aged old man and the card dealer whose head was sharp like a grasshopper all bowed respectfully to welcome them.

Even though the two Heaven Tier rankers had raised their arms to calm everyone down,

Some people could not help but scream in excitement: “ It really is a Gold Grimoire. Oh my, she has the legendary Gold Grimoire, I am going to faint!”

Actually, Yi Nan’s Summoning Grimoire had already upgraded to Platinum Beginner level.

But those people at least knew that in order to be able to return to

Grimoire World, the Grimoire had to be at least Gold level. This was why they guessed that Yi Nan's Grimoire was a Gold Grimoire. As for those two Heaven Tier rankers, one of them was a middle-aged uncle with Fu Manchu mustache. His appearance and temperament were rather fine. He belonged to the same type of person as Jun Wu You and had an aura around him. The other was a monster, with four limbs and three eyes, it looked quite similar to Three-eyed Tiger Man.

But it was not a Tiger Man.

It was a species that even Yue Yang did not recognise.

"Welcome, welcome!" The middle-aged uncle with a Fu Manchu mustache went forth and greeted them: "I am Bai Hou, the Master of Waterfall City. After hearing the news from my disciples, thinking that our distinguished guests were holding onto a Bronze Grimoire, I was hoping to welcome you into our sect. Turns out that our distinguished guests' Summoning Grimoire were already at least Gold level. I am ashamed, ashamed!"

"Our distinguished guests have travelled far, if it is not too much, could we take a look at your Grimoire?" That Heaven Rank monster was also rather courteous, it summoned its own Silver Grimoire first.

When the Silver Grimoire appeared, the entire crowd erupted in cheers.

The applause sounded like thunder.

As for Master of Waterfall City Bai Hou, he smiled and also summoned his own Grimoire. His Grimoire was also a Silver Grimoire, but it was high ranked, a little stronger than the Heaven Rank Monster's middle-ranked Silver Grimoire.

Their intention was very simple, they just wanted to compare their Grimoire.

In Heaven Realm, the rankers who owned Grimoires really do

have such a habit.

Yi Nan glanced at Yue Yang. After gaining his silent approval, she said: “Since everyone wants to see my Summoning Grimoire, it is not a problem. But you all have to agree to one condition. After looking at it, let us leave freely and not use any reason to stop us.” Seeing how these people did not have any ill-intentions and just wanted to compare Grimoires and make a friend who also owns a Grimoire, she was naturally unafraid.

If these people wanted to create trouble, she would retaliate and attack with Yue Yang, be it a romantic honeymoon or not.

Even though the middle-aged uncle and monster were at Heaven Rank, they were not a problem to Yue Yang who could defeat even the Thousand Goblin King.

After receiving an affirmative response from everyone, Yi Nan smiled cheekily at Yue Yang.

She stretched out her arm that glowed like jade, her fingers, as beautiful as white orchids, gently tapped the air.

She summoned her Grimoire elegantly.

Instantly, a strange light shone.....

When everyone saw Yi Nan’s Platinum Grimoire, the air stilled. Everyone turned into stone, even the two Heaven Tier Rankers who were trying their best to maintain their composure!

Three hours later, Yi Nan walked out from a teleportation circle. She could not stop laughing, her laughter filled the night air like silver bells. It rang along with the wind, lifting through the night delicately. Even Yue Yang could not stop smiling. This was all because even he could not have imagined the crowd’s extremely unusual reaction from seeing the Platinum Grimoire.

He had thought it would have been a bloodbath, turns out it was not the case at all.

At the thought that the two Heaven Tier Rankers had wanted to become Yi Nan's disciple, and learn the secrets of levelling up the Grimoire, Yue Yang could not stop laughing.

“Heaven Realm is really too much fun. Hehe, but in the future when we register as mercenaries, we cannot mention our Grimoire. Otherwise, there would be more people giving us so many gifts that we do not need.....” Yi Nan linked with Yue Yang's arm. After walking a long distance, she turned around to look at the teleportation circle. Only after realising that no one had followed them, she breathed a sigh of relief: “They have finally all gone back. I thought they would be sending us all the way to West Heaven Realm! Oh right, Bai Hou City master said that within this ‘domain’, Rainbow City was the most beautiful. How about we visit Rainbow City?”

“As you wish, my beautiful bride!” Yue Yang cupped her tiny face and landed a kiss on her jade lips.

# Chapter 607 – Inspect? Inspect Your Sister!

---

Waterfall City to Rainbow City was a journey of more than 2000 kilometers.

As the two cities were not on friendly terms, there was no connecting teleportation circle. They could only stop at Stallion City to transit, and switch to take an airship to continue their journey.

Actually, Yue Yang and Yi Nan could have teleported nearer. But Yi Nan wanted to ride on the ‘Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship’ that Waterfall City master had strongly recommended. This extremely luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship was an enormous airship. It could contain tens of thousands of travellers. It was splendidly decorated, on the cabin deck there were even man-made lakes and beaches, a water theme park and a themed garden.

People who are active can take part in rock climbing competitions and passionately surf; People who are quiet could quietly watch graceful musicals.

This sort of Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship, was the most iconic means of transportation of Rainbow City.

Almost every visitor to Rainbow City would take a ride on it.

“What a scam!” If Yue Yang had not come to Heaven Realm, he would never have realised how poor he was. Turns out, the demon crystals that he obtained in Wyvern Valley were almost depleted. But it was still not enough. To ride on the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship, even the cheapest ticket cost a hundred gold. Two people would cost two hundred gold. To Yue Yang who did not have a penny on him, seeing his demon crystals flow from him like water made him want to pull out his sword and rob someone.

A hundred gold just to take a lousy ship?

Moreover, after boarding the ship, the expenses for drinking and

eating still had to be calculated separately.

But to coax this girl, to chase her, Yue Yang went all out. Since these demon crystal were robbed, since it was not enough, he would think of how to get more.

After buying the ticket, they waited for another half hour.

Finally, the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship appeared on the horizon.

First, it was a small black dot in the distance. It slowly became clearer as it came closer, and turned into a colossus that no one could imagine.

When it reached the skies above Stallion City, it was as big as an entire city area. Standing in its shadow, Yue Yang estimated that just this ship's width was at least a thousand meters. Its length, was even three times of its width.

This colossus that was almost as tall as a hundred storey building at almost five hundred meters, Yue Yang could not imagine how it could stay afloat in the sky. Moreover, at the speed that it flies, it was comparable to aeroplanes. What was most impressive was that this huge cruise was surrounded by winds that were domain-like which could turn air into soft breezes. Countless passengers were standing on the deck, standing while facing the wind. But this wind only gently caressed their hair and clothes, they were not affected in the least by the strong wind power that was pushing the airship forward.

When the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship stopped, everyone on the cruise and the city below started cheering with the steam whistle blowing in the background greeting everyone.

From the giant cruise, a small airship was sent down to receive the passengers boarding from Stallion City.

Following protocol, the royalty who spent 3000 gold for a first-class cabin went first.



The rich merchants who purchased the middle-class cabin for 1000 coins went next.

While normal-ticketed passengers like Yue Yang and Yi Nan could only board the last, together with a group of mercenary dressed in tatters.

“Are you two travelling to get married? Or is this a honeymoon?” A big one-eyed dragon man who was on the same trip asked curiously after seeing Yue Yang and Yi Nan, this couple, hold hands sweetly.

“Oh, we have not gotten married yet. But, soon.....” Yi Nan answered shyly.

“Congratulations, you two are a match made in heaven.” One-eyed Dragon fished out a wine gourd and passed it to Yue Yang. Seeing Yue Yang reject it, he laughed loudly while opening the cap to take a large swig. He smiled: “Actually when I was young, I was handsome too. In fact, I was as handsome as you are. And my wife, back in the day she was also as pretty as this young lady. Looking at you two brings me back, as if I was looking at my wife and I back then.”

“Is that so?” Yue Yang secretly smiled.

Yue Yang was very speechless.

Uncle, there was no need to blow your own trumpet to such an extent right? Forget that you are one-eyed, your face that looks like old tree bark with your half beast-like body and that palm leaf fan-like hand, how could you be a handsome man back in the day? To not be scared to death after seeing you in the middle of the night, would already be laughable. That is to say, who would marry such a half-beast? Unless she herself was a barbarian who was extremely bulky herself, or an Ox-head person.

If according to Fan Lun Tie’s standard of beauty, this one-eyed dragon might even be considered handsome. But in a human’s

eyes, that would be impossible.

Yue Yang estimated that unless that woman was blind, she would not have married this one-eyed dragon uncle.

When the surrounding mercenaries saw the one-eyed dragon striking up a conversation, they started waving at Yue Yang enthusiastically to send their blessings. Some people were even catcalling. Their noisy ruckus made the royalty in front frown. These arrogant royalty did not care about Yue Yang and Yi Nan who had no clan symbol nor a sect medal. In their eyes, Yue Yang and Yi Nan were peasants from the countryside. To even look at them one more glance, their status would drop.

“What arrogance!” A skinny mercenary standing beside one-eyed dragon sneered.

“He is a Great Master, don’t talk rubbish.” One-eyed dragon quickly gave his companion a slap when he saw the aristocrat’s security look over. He then quickly bowed in respect to the aristocrats. Yi Nan disliked these sort of people the most and turned away from them. But Yue Yang frowned, he felt that something was amiss.

“Get on the boat quickly, we can’t be here waiting for you peasant mercenaries! Do you know that any extra second we wait here, how much energy we will be wasting? Even if you are Heaven Rank, even selling your body will not be enough to pay for it. Quick, quick, stop dragging your feet!” One of the crew members waved his hand angrily to rush Yue Yang and the normal-ticketed passengers while welcoming the aristocrats walking in front onto the boat with the most formal etiquette.

Another crew member laid out the red carpet to welcome the arrogant aristocrats.

They pointed Yue Yang and Yi Nan to another entrance. In there, there was nothing at all other than a man holding a torch who looked like he was going to conduct a body check to check for any

prohibited items.

When one-eyed dragon was checked, he was very open. He removed his pants himself and even let out a huge fart that made the inspector order him to leave.

More than 10 mercenaries passed easily.

Finally, it was Yue Yang and Yi Nan's turn.

“Come to this side and stand properly. Raise your hands high and put them on top of your head. Face the side of the ship and your back to me. I am going to check for any prohibited items. Many women keep prohibited items in their bras and underwear, cunning like foxes. Come over here, you two be careful. Don't make trouble when I'm inspecting, otherwise there will be trouble!” When the inspector saw Yi Nan's beauty, he almost could not control his saliva. Since Yue Yang and Yi Nan seem weak, both Earth Rank Level 1 when he was Level 3, he was sure he could destroy them two.

The perverted inspector could not stop sneering. Right in front of Yue Yang's face, he stretched his hairy hand towards Yi Nan.

That skinny mercenary seemed triggered, but one-eyed dragon pulled him back.

The surrounding crew members seemed used to this sight. They whistled away and pretended not to see. The aristocrats did not care and simply walked away.

That inspector's vulgar and insulting hand stretched over without the slightest scruple..... When it was half an inch away from Yi Nan, Yue Yang smiled and raised his hand. Crescent Blade flashed. He chopped that hand off straight off the bone.

And before that inspector could even scream, Yue Yang sent his leg flying toward the guy's crotch.

Almost everyone heard a shattering sound.

At this sound, all the men's legs could not help but give out. They could almost feel the breeze between their legs.

Even though the other crew members rushed forward, Yue Yang did not stop his attack. He stomped on that guy's crotch ruthlessly, even using his toes to grind forcefully. He seemed to have no intention to stop until he stomped it to a pulp. Yi Nan watched quietly. Not only did she not stop him, her anger was being vented too. This was because she was furious. To such trash that had no respect for her, such scum that dared threaten Yue Yang, she did not have an ounce of sympathy. In fact, she felt that the worse off the punishment, the better.

"Dogs that bite do not bark. Oh my, this guy is really ruthless." At this sight, one-eyed dragon shuddered.

"Stop, stop!" Many crew members did not dare go forth and only dared to shout from the sides in fear of Yue Yang.

Yue Yang turned a deaf ear.

He picked up the inspecting device and showered down blows on the inspector who was already spitting blood and fainting. Only when the inspector was completely battered, disfigured, smattered, did Yue Yang stop. There was nothing left to hit. Yue Yang casually threw away the distorted inspecting device and heavily spat on the inspector's face.

Then, he slowly looked at those crew members and smiled brightly: "Who else, wants to inspect us?"

His smile made many crew members step back in fear.

Even one-eyed dragon trembled, shouting: "This guy is very dangerous, everyone stay away. This guy cannot be provoked!"

A few aristocrats looked over with a face of disgust, as if they were looking at trash, and continued walking away calmly.

If not that their strides seem a different from usual, no one could tell that their legs were trembling under their long robes and

simply be fooled by their calmness and arrogance. Actually, even they were scared. They were just pretending to show disdain for everything.

In the distance, a few Earth Rank Level 5 cruise security guards flew out.

Leading, was a Earth Ranked Level 7 leader.

This guy was bald, his body blacker than ink itself. His eyes though, were silver and had no pupil. No one could tell who he was looking at, as if he was a black stone statue. Before he even spoke, a few crew members rushed forward to report what happened. Of course, they exaggerated and lied about Yue Yang's misdoings to make him seem like a lunatic out for blood. That if Yue Yang did not fight for a day, he would not be able to stand it.

"Is that so?" That black stone like leader looked towards Yue Yang.

"....." Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders confidently. He did not say anything. People could say what they want, it was their own mouths, he could not care and did not care.

Yue Yang was already unhappy with the pent-up anger from before, when he had to spend 200 gold coins to buy a normal ticket, wasting hundreds of his Level six and seven Wyvern demon crystals. To Yue Yang who was so always so stingy and only saved, never spending, it was already something to be furious over. Now, they were fussing over some inspection. Inspect, inspect your sister! It wasn't as if Osama bin Laden was here to bomb the twin towers! That was why Yue Yang decided not that enough was enough. Wasn't he already penniless? He should just rob this entire Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship, anyway he was here to create chaos in Heaven Realm, the timing did not matter!

Yi Nan too felt that these people were being overboard. They just wanted to travel happily, but things were such a mess now.

She was a little unhappy.

That was why when Yue Yang wanted to flare up, not only did she not stop him, she helped him.

Do not think that just because they were low ranked, they were easy targets. If they decided to take action, everyone would feel the wrath of Hallucination Butterfly and Spirit Mirror, and they would die in a terrifying nightmare.....

The leader who seemed like black stone looked at the mercenaries around.

One-eyed dragon smiled: "That was what happened. It's okay to do inspections, but to use this opportunity to take advantage of another man's woman really isn't that great. Oh, pretend I didn't say anything!"

That skinny guy had more loyalty, his answer was a powerful 'spit', and a face full of disdain.

"Leader, they are all on the same side." Those crew members quickly defended themselves.

"Slap, slap slap!" What was the most unexpected was that the stone statue-like guy actually slapped each of the crew members: "Apologise, then get rid of this trash. Our cruise only has staff of the finest quality, there is no need for trash."

"Wait, leader, he, he is....." A crew member with loose front teeth wanted to say that the trash Yue Yang had beaten up had someone powerful behind him.

"I don't care who brought this trash in. Trash is trash, the disposal method is all the same!" That black statue-like leader picked up the unconscious inspector easily and with everyone watching, like throwing trash, he threw the inspector out of the boat. He turned to Yue Yang and Yi Nan, and bowed slightly. Expressionless, he said: "Welcome to Starry Sky Cruise, please have an enjoyable journey."

# Chapter 608 – Embarrassing? You Are The One That Is Embarrassing!

---

Many busybodies thought that a fight would ensue.

No one expected such a disappointing outcome. After the stone-like leader left, the mercenaries all dispersed. One-eyed dragon looked at Yue Yang and Yi Nan again and again pensively. The skinny man looked at them with a strand of respect. At first, he was indifferent towards Yue Yang who was of much lower level than him. But after he saw Yue Yang's attack, he was completely won over.

Protecting one's beloved to attack a much more powerful enemy was already very brave.

But to be able to beat the inspector in front of everyone and then face the enemy's powerful leader, all the while unafraid and calm, was out of anything the skinny mercenary could ever imagine.

What kind of person, with what kind of mentality, could do this? He had seen arrogant masters before, but he had never met a commoner who had carried himself with the same arrogance.

"This young man..... how should I put it. He seems similar to Big Sis." The skinny mercenary came to such a conclusion. But then suddenly he denied that thought in shock. How could it be, Big Sis was a Heaven Rank ranker. This guy was only an Earth Rank Level 1 commoner, he was only able to chop off the inspector's hand because of his Platinum Rank blade. Without the blade, the other crew member would have already attacked him. Skinny mercenary left with the crowd, looking at Yue Yang and Yi Nan from afar.

He still felt that this young man was very ordinary.

Other than being handsome, powerful weapons, his ability was nothing to talk about..... Just now, that feeling should only be because he was shocked!

Skinny comforted himself this way. On the other hand, one-eyed dragon also turned to look at Yue Yang and smiled at him. His smile seemed to have a hidden meaning, as if he already discovered a secret.

“Where should we go to play? How about, we go find something to eat first!” Yi Nan realized that the boat had already started moving. At first, she wanted to suggest going to the ship’s bow to feel the sea breeze while looking at the land’s beautiful scenery. But seeing that around them were still many people sneaking looks over and pointing fingers commenting, she pulled Yue Yang away and did not want to be the center of attention any more.

“Welcome, welcome!!” When the crew member who had his teeth loosen from the punch saw Yue Yang and Yi Nan walking over, his legs almost gave out. He quickly bowed, welcoming them the same way as aristocrats.

“Handsome, do you want to drink together?” Different from the aristocrat’s lounge, here in the ordinary lounge, there was a different view. Here, there were many women dressed to the nines and wearing heavy makeup. All of them were posing seductively to attract the guests. These women were from many different clans, tall, short, fat, skinny, everyone had their own charms. They stood on the two sides of the staircase and when the mercenaries walked over, they will say hi coyly, hoping for someone to notice them.

“Of course I will be drinking, but we can do something more important!” One-eyed dragon walked in front of them stuffed a gold coin into a woman’s deep cleavage, and pulled her over by her corseted waist skillfully. His hand slid down quickly and squeezed her firm buttocks. When the lady moaned, he laughed in victory and left the group with the women he chose.

The other mercenaries also picked up girls one after another, and brought a big group of women away.

Even the expressionless skinny mercenary picked an Ocean Horse



Clan's strong woman who was two heads higher than him. The contrast between their bodies, was stark.

“Ji Zai, are you sure that you can ride such an Ocean Horse? Be careful that she will suck you dry!” The mercenaries all started laughing.

“Scram, leave me alone!” Skinny mercenary replied angrily.

These women dressed to the nines and wearing heavy makeup were actually very mature.

Seeing that Yue Yang and Yi Nan were obviously a couple, no one approached them. They also did not blow out smoke rings coyly as when the single mercenaries passed by. They were very clear what kind of people will be their customers. But at the wide dance hall below, there were some men who were obviously too dense to realise what was good for them. Despite already being with a woman in their arms, their eyes lit up like wolves when they saw Yi Nan.

A Small Fatty with a pretty lady companion came over. He showed interest in playing together, or exchanging, any way Yue Yang preferred.

Yue Yang's answer, was to kick that guy, sending him more than 10 meters away.

Boom!

A loud boom sounded and scared everyone in the dance hall. Everyone stopped dancing and twisted their heads to take a look..... That Small Fatty's nose was spewing blood. He laid on the floor like a pig, unable to crawl up even after a long time. On his belly full of fat, everyone could see a clear footprint.

The mercenaries that recognized Yue Yang all thought that this was normal.

A kick was considered going easy on him.

That perverted inspector just now, was crippled by Yue Yang. Especially that step on the crotch, everyone felt a pain in their balls for that guy!

The fact that the Small Fatty still had his balls was a blessing from the ancestors.

“Bring it over!” Skinny mercenaries and his companions had placed bets for one gold coin over who would win, and he had won.

“Who cares about exchanging, but how can you hit people?” Small Fatty’s woman scolded loudly in fury. But she did not dare attack Yue Yang, and only ran to help Small Fatty up, grumbling: “It’s all because of you, useless thing. You even said that you were top five in some academy, but you were hit by such a country bumpkin. Don’t even think of me coming out with you next time, embarrassing!”

“Damn it, watch me beat that boy up for you!” Small Fatty was triggered by his female companion. His entire face red, he rolled up his sleeves ready to fight Yue Yang.

“What happened? Stop!” Some cruise security guards rushed over. At the sight of Yue Yang and Yi Nan, they were stunned: “You two again?”

At this moment, someone went to Small Fatty and whispered into his ear.

This person had seen Yue Yang hit the inspector just now, and quickly said that this country bumpkin was maybe actually an aristocrat in disguise. It is very possible that he has someone powerful supporting him because even after hitting the inspector outside, even the leader of the security did not dare say anything.

Hearing this, Small Fatty’s face paled. He took several deep breaths, forcing the anger within him down.

Even cruise security were having a headache over Yue Yang.

This guy was not that powerful, but he was the best in the world

at creating trouble, starting fights every few minutes. Before they even reach Rainbow City, this guy most likely would have fought with everyone on the boat. Some of the cruise security guards looked at each other in dismay, no one knew what to do. That such an arrogant person was a country bumpkin with no powerful support? Impossible! He was for sure the son of a lord who liked to disguise as a commoner to play with people, if not why would he have such a pretty female companion? If not how could he be so bad-tempered?

If this guy had just come out from the countryside, he should be curled up like a quail.

Which country bumpkin dared to hit people on Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship?

For sure, he must be some aristocrat, or at least the illegitimate child of some great sect leader, those that even though private, he still had powerful support!

“If you don’t like to dance, why not go to Jewel Cabin to play a few rounds! It is bigger there, and the service is better!” Some of the cruise security felt that to leave the aristocrat here would definitely keep trouble brewing. They would just persuade Yue Yang to gamble in the cruise’s casino. One must know that with all that money in their pockets, aristocrats love gambling.

“Jewel Cabin?” Just nice, Yue Yang wanted to earn some money for him to spend. For a man to have no money in his pockets was really too insufferable.

“.....” That fatty stared at Yue Yang’s back, fury flashed across his eyes.

“Do we just leave like this?” The female companion was still bitter.

“Come, let’s go to Jewel Cabin too. We will play that gigolo to death.” Small Fatty did not feel confident in fighting fist to fist, but

he was richer. He could make the country bumpkin broke through gambling even if he seemed like he had powerful backing. To fight brains and not fists, the Small Fatty, who thought he was smart and rich, pulled his female companion to quickly follow after Yue Yang and Yi Nan. One-eyed dragon and skinny mercenary glanced at each other and nodded secretly, following into Jewel Cabin laughing: “Let’s go gamble 2 rounds, Lady Luck seems to be on our side today!”

While saying that, one-eyed dragon’s other hand was caressing a woman’s round butt.

At this time, that skinny mercenary seemed as if he could not wait a second longer and rushedly pulled that giant woman to open a room. When he and the woman went into the room, they did not roll onto the bed, but instead within the skirt of the Ocean Horse, he took out countless demon crystals and formed a strange crystal diagram.

The diagram shone and sent out an extremely strange signal.

It seemed to be sending out a message.

Even the boat’s correspondent who was in charge of monitoring all received signals knew nothing about this. Only Yue Yang, who was holding Yi Nan’s small hand, frowned slightly.

He glanced at one-Eyed dragon, and realised that skinny mercenary was missing.

“What’s wrong?” seeing Yue Yang stop moving, Yi Nan thought that he was looking at the Small Fatty that had trailed along and gently persuaded: “How about, I will leave for a while, and after you have sorted everything out, I will come to find you?”

“It’s not important.” Yue Yang would never even worry about Small Fatty. He was more worried about those mercenaries that were like perverts.

Yue Yang was a pauper.

He was rich in Tong Tian Tower, but in Heaven Realm, he did not even have a single gold coin.

A few demon crystals could only exchange for one gold coin, holding onto this smallest denomination made Yue Yang's heart bleed..... The currency exchange rate in Heaven Realm was really a scam. He had used Level 7 demon crystals. If this was Tong Tian Tower, the number of gold coins exchanged could bury someone in it. Here, it was only worth one gold coin, and there was even a tax of a level 3 demon crystal.

Yi Nan knew that Yue Yang was a penny-pincher who never spent any money. She giggled: "Let's use it as our capital. We will at least win two three hundred gold, and earn back all our losses!"

Yue Yang disagree: "No, we should at least win twenty thirty thousand. Two three hundred? That is not even enough to pay for my mental damage!"

The Small Fatty behind who exchanged ten thousand gold chips laughed loudly: "Haha, two paupers who only fantasise wildly! Just admit it if you are broke, just kneel and call me young master. Young master will immediately reward you with a few gold coins! After exchanging for just one chip, you still want to earn face. Do you know what is called embarrassing?"

"Of course, a person like you, would be embarrassing." Once Yue Yang said this, the mercenaries standing behind almost fell down in laughter.

"Nonsense....." Small Fatty's face looked worse than death.

# Chapter 609 – Is It Luck ? or Is It Cheating ?

---

When it comes to gambling, Yue Yang was an amateur.

On top of that, today was the first time he saw the Heaven Realm's style of gambling, making gambling even more unfamiliar to him. For example, the Heaven Realm had this gambling game that was similar to the dice game. However, it was not as simple as shaking a few ivory dices. The dice was a type of dice-shaped battle doll, once it starts spinning, no one would be able to correctly guess when it will stop, nor hear any sounds.

In fact, these dice-shaped battle dolls would create false images and use fake sounds to deceive gamblers.

In one word, normal human beings can only rely on luck and nothing else to win.

This of course did not include people with extremely special abilities...

“Does that pauper from the countryside even know what is a battle doll dice?” Small fatty mocked and ridiculed while tailing behind Yue Yang. Worried that Yue Yang would lose his temper and hit him, small fatty hired two cruise security guards in advance to ensure his safety at all times.

“So silly!” Upon seeing how disgusting that guy was, even the initially good-tempered Yi Nan felt like beating him up.

The battle doll dice that Small Fatty mentioned is a way of gambling in the Jewel Cabin

There were 10 battle doll dice in each giant dice cup.

If a person was able to guess the total correctly, then the payout was more than 10 times the bet.

Of course, very little people would guess correctly. Other than guessing the total, there was also guessing by individual dices. A

person can guess once for every dice, if the guess was correct then the payout was 1:1. The more correct individual guesses the higher the payout. If six guesses were correct then the payout was 1:6; if eight were correct then the payout was 1:8.

There was also the most difficult gambling method.

If a person was able to guess the value of all 10 dices, its total, and their sequence, then the highest payout was 1:100.

Yue Yang decided bet into this type, marching towards the hardest challenge, the highest payout.

With this kind of payout, he would become a millionaire with just a few wins!

“Which one are we betting on?” Yi Nan had never gambled with money before. She held Yue Yang’s arms and excitedly raise up the sole gambling chip that they had. She felt that betting on anything would win, but also felt that betting on anything would lose, she simply could not decide.

“Dear guest, please finalize your bets.” A hot & sexy female demon clan dealer chided Yi Nan to quickly decide.

“Anything is fine.” Yue Yang randomly threw out his chip, landing on the place with a sum of 55. Afterwards, he took the betting booklet that the female dealer handed over. He placed a check mark on the line up of 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. Yi Nan was stunned for a while and expressionlessly asked: “We only have one chip. What should we do if we lost by betting on this sequence?”

Even if it was Yi Nan, who believed in Yue Yang the most, she did not believe that the next result of the battle doll dice would be a sequence from 1 to 10. Although there was probability for this type of sequence to appear, that probability was too small to the point of impossibility. This was really the case. Ever since the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship set sailed, the battle doll dice had never produced this kind of results. The appearance of a sequence from 1

to 10 was simply impossible.

The small fatty laughed to tears as if he was about to fall on the gambling table.

At the beginning, he thought that Yue Yang was some kind of expert, winning a lot with just one chip. He never imagined that Yue Yang was simply trash!

“An idiot, this country bumpkin is a natural born idiot. If this sequence could win, then this young master will eat the dice cup on the spot. Using a single chip to win 2-3 thousand? Peh! You are dreaming too early. You are only a frog in a well who doesn’t know that immensity of heaven and earth. What kind of place do you think this is you country bumpkin. This is the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship. How could a poor natural born idiotic pauper like you win anything? Quickly jump down and commit suicide, your next life might be better. You might not even to check your own reflection to win a lottery.”

“I never imagined that someone, who grew so handsome, could be a mental patient!” The female companion was still reminded of Yue Yang’s rejection.

Naturally, if Yue Yang said that he would get on top of her right now, she would most likely strip immediately.

The flames of jealousy of obtaining something she could not burned inside her.

The one-eyed dragon was watching the play from the crowd. He chuckled like a mercenary that loved to go where crowds were.

The female demon clan dealer waited until everyone placed their bets and then clapped her hands. She pressed a bell behind her, indicating that the cups will be opened. The small fatty jumped up and down and pulled faces. Other than the box that Yue Yang bet on, he placed his bets on all other gates, preparing to ridicule Yue Yang after he wins. This kind of bet was guaranteed to lose, but he



did not care as long as he could suppress and attack Yue Yang.

The small fatty swung his hips from side to side: “Lalala, you idiot. Once the cup opens, you will be stunned..... You will forever be an idiotic loser.....”

He sung as he spoke, pleased with himself.

However, when the dice cups opened, his laughter seemed as if cut by a knife, ending spontaneously.

His eyes expanded as big as a cow's. But no matter how he tried to expand his eyes, it was unable to change the truth. The opened cup in front of everyone made them stunned in disbelief. The cups revealed the sequence of 1 to 10 without a single one lacking. Let alone the fatty, even the one-eyed dragon, even the female demon clan dealer were shocked. She did not dare believe that this kind of sequence actually came out from the battle doll dices.

“Ah? Eh!” Yi Nan excitedly jumped, disregarding everyone and gave Yue Yang a kiss.

She could not understand the reason for this.

However, she knew that Yue Yang definitely used one of his special abilities, changing the results of the battle doll dice.

Winning money was a small matter, making a fierce counterattack against the opponent's provocation was what gave her the most joy.

Yi Nan felt her hatred disappear after seeing the small fatty's appearance of being slapped in the face by Yue Yang.

“This is simply impossible. You cheated. You definitely cheated else it is impossible for this sequence to appear!” The small fatty seemed as if his entire family died. He exasperatedly clutched his hair and angrily pointed at Yue Yang, accusing him of cheating.

Actually, everyone was suspicious.

If this was not cheating, then it was too much of a coincidence.

But, how could you cheat in battle doll dice? No one had ever heard of such a thing before. These battle doll dice were made by battle doll grand masters, who vowed to the gods that they would never gamble. Other than their owners, these battle doll dice would never listen to others. Even Heaven Rank Rankers were unable to change their independent personalities. Moreover, if Yue Yang cheated, how could no one from the huge crowd see it?

The most important thing was that the female demon clan dealer's immediate clarification: "Dear guest, please take note. It is eternally impossible to cheat in battle doll dice. They each have their own personality, their own turning speed, their own will, no one could change that. I can assure you that no one can cheat. Being able to win this round was all due to these two guests' luck! Congratulations, this is your payout!"

The female demon clan dealer's assistant immediately returned 100 chips back to Yue Yang.

Although the payout was small, this was due to Yue Yang's small bet. A loss of 100 gold coins was simply a drop in the ocean for them, and it did not even fall short of the small fatty's bet. "Impossible, you must have used some unknown method. If this was really luck, then lets see him win another round!" The small fatty was unable to pull back. After seeing how everyone was laughing at him like laughing at a clown, he became even more ashamed. His face turned red as he gnashed his teeth and pointed at Yue Yang, wanting Yue Yang to bet another round. Everyone shook their heads while looking at the small fatty's crazed appearance.

Some meddlesome people even brought up the earlier grudge between Yue Yang and the small fatty.

As a result, everyone came to a sudden realization.

Everyone looked at the small fatty with a sneer as if seeing a moronic second generation rudely making trouble, loathing him.

One-eyed dragon was first shocked at Yue Yang's win and then smiled as he muttered: "Interesting, it seems that I had underestimated him. Sigh, Big Sister's words were not mistaken. This business transaction truly had a surprise in it!"

Yue Yang once again tossed to a random sum and then let Yi Nan choose a sequence.

Yi Nan happily counted for a while and finally marked a sequence that she believed would win and returned it to Yue Yang. Actually, she did not care whether they won or not, but winning would be a slap on the opponents face, spreading her lover's awesomeness, only then would she be happy. She knew that only those Heaven Realm Citizen who did not recognize Yue Yang would underestimate him. If it was inside the Tong Tian Tower, even an idiot would know that a battle of wits with Yue Yang was the greatest mistake.

In Heaven Realm, Jiu Xiao and Xu Kong, who knew Yue Yang, regarded him as a formidable enemy.

Yi Nan felt that if they did not show their might to such a worthless small fatty's provocation she would be unable to calm down.

"We must win!" Yi Nan clenched her small hands and fervently looked at Yue Yang.

"Of course!" Yue Yang confidently smiled.

"Yes!" Yi Nan knew that Yue Yang doted on her. For her happiness, he would definitely let this round be a win. Although this was cheating, it was for her sake..... happiness instantly filled her heart.

"Dreaming, you are only dreaming. You will lose, you will definitely lose this time....." The small fatty's companion repeatedly cursed.

"If you have the guts then duel with me. Let us do a show down

for 100 gold, no 1000 gold!” The small fatty was utterly enraged. He kept howling at Yue Yang as his lungs almost exploded from rage. He actually wanted to punch Yue Yang but he was very weak. Moreover, fighting was not allowed inside the Jewel Cabin, whoever started the fight first must compensate for all the damages. The small fatty did not want to offend the owner of the cruise ship just because of Yue Yang because that owner was a strong person.

“Why is there a housefly buzzing here? So annoying!” Yue Yang made a gesture of shooing a housefly and everyone watching laughed at it.

“Dear guests, please finalize your bets.” The female demon clan dealer was joyful about the customer’s fighting spirit. This was because the more the situation escalated the more the Jewel Cabin earns. Normally, the place was unfrequented and quiet, the Jewel Cabin itself would even hire people to pretend to be gamblers to provoke others and raise the mood.

Yue Yang betted all of the 100 chips again, betting with the highest payout.

There was an uproar among the gamblers upon seeing this.

Had this guy gone mad?

Although 100 gold coins was not considered a lot, but it was uncommon to bet it all on one stake.

He correctly guessed the sequence that was almost impossible to appear out of luck, and he still wanted to try his luck again? Even if he was a favourite of the God of Luck, it was not possible for him to win two consecutive rounds. That was even more difficult than getting hit on the head with a pie that fell from the sky!

The female demon clan dealer felt the pressure as well. If Yue Yang was to win this round again, then the payout would be ten thousand gold coins...

“Convert the chips that I won into gold coins, then make me a bronze card that is accepted anywhere. Send it to room 0068, and please be quick, I hope to receive the card in five minutes at the latest.” With just a few words of instructions, Yue Yang took Yi Nan’s hand and left the gambling table. Everyone was stunned upon hearing his words. What did this guy meant? Did he really think he would win for sure? The dice cup had not even been opened yet! Out of the 10 battle doll dice in the dice cup, there were at least three battle doll dice that would only stop the moment when the dice cup was opened. This guy actually thought he could win for sure when the dice cup had not yet even been opened?

Yi Nan was very curious too. How did Yue Yang know that this bet will win?

However, she did not ask him.

That was because Yue Yang lightly scratched her palm a few times; a secret code between the two of them which signaled the oncoming danger and that they need to avoid it immediately...

The one-eyed dragon kept on looking at Yue Yang, the more he looked, the more perplexed he got. This guy was really mysterious? Even he who had the ‘single eye peek’ was unable to look through the dice cup.

The female demon clan dealer’s fingers lightly trembled. She held her breath, and reach out to gently open the dice cup.

As a result, everyone was in an uproar...

## Chapter 610 – Are You Stealing Or Recruiting?

---

“Noble guest, your card has been prepared. There is 9090 gold inside, the tax is 10%. This chip is a present from the Jewel Cabin as a keepsake. This was the first chip that dear guest used to win the gamble twice. May dear guest be forever blessed with fortune.” A beautiful woman from a different tribe, knocked on the room door almost immediately once Yue Yang returned to his cabin. Other than offering a thin bronze card with a heaven rune spread across it to Yue Yang, she also passed the delicately wrapped gambling chip to Yi Nan.

“Wow, thank you!” Yi Nan also felt that this token could bring her luck and accepted it blissfully.

“.....” However, Yue Yang remained calm and collected, accepted the bronze card and quickly closed the room door.

“We became a household with savings of 10,000 gold in such a short time, why are you unhappy?” Yi Nan asked with a smile as she placed her arm around Yue Yang’s neck, tiptoed and gave him a kiss.

“We might be in for a bit of trouble, this boat might be destroyed. I am considering whether to go back into the Grimoire World. If we go back, we wouldn’t be able to see what happens here. But if we do not go back, it might be dangerous.” Seeing that Yi Nan did not understand, Yue Yang said in a low voice, “Someone wants to cause an explosion on the boat, I felt a very powerful energy wave.”

Once he finished his sentence, a loud explosion could be heard instantly.

After the huge explosion, a huge shock could be felt.

But with Yue Yang protecting her with both hands, Yi Nan was

not injured at all. She used her white fingers to cover her ears. Seeing the whole room collapsing and things breaking, she stuck out her small pink tongue.

The surroundings stopped for a few seconds, then the noise started. Without waiting for people to figure out what had happened, an alarm bell sounded off. Then, a crew member's voice sounded out in the broadcast: "Noble guests of the ship, there is a bandit group on the ship. Please remain calm. Our bodyguards will repel the enemies, protecting everyone's lives and assets. Ah ah ah....."

Before the guy finished talking, he seemed to have been killed by someone.

Instantly, blood-curdling screams that seemed like a huge stone thrown into a still lake, like a stick hitting onto a beehive, caused a huge disturbance. In the boat cabin, screams sounded one after the other, there were also people shouting out for help. Some even destroyed the cabin door to escape to a safe location. The crowd of people that were all trying to escape. Those who rushed out without even dressing up properly were mostly mercenaries and beautiful women from the ship.

"My god, there are thieves on the boat, thieves are robbing things. Run quick, run quick!"

"It is a bandit group, there are so many people....."

"Shit, I can't find my pants. Damn it, who can lend me a pair of pants?"

"Humph!" that skinny mercenary and the ocean horse woman were also escaping amidst the crowd.

They even tripped mercenaries around them purposely, causing more panic.

Yue Yang shut his eyes, waited slowly, until the chaos outside settled down, then lightly nodded his head to Yi Nan, who was in

his embrace, and said with all certainty: “There is really someone robbing the boat, and a large number of them. There are around a thousand people surrounding the boat, and there are also explosive spots on the boat, and even someone supplying the people outside with information. As for the guide here, it should be a form of activation signal, allowing the people lying in wait to attack at the same time..... The leader of these thieves is not simple, attacking such a big cruise ship, and the plan is going smoothly. Such a capable person doing such a good job!”

“Then, you should stay here to watch how things unfold, I will go back first.” Yi Nan kissed Yue Yang’s cheek lovably, and chuckled.

“Actually, you can also stay. Don’t forget our identity, we are commoners with little power and status, these thieves would not rob us. I guess that their targets are those nobles with a lot of gold. Haha, we can take advantage of this crisis and get something out of it! Come, let me bring you to do something exciting!” Yue Yang wanted to send Yi Nan back initially, but seeing that the thieves robbing the ship were not simple people, he was sure that they were not interested in someone as insignificant as him, and wanted to bring Yi Nan out for an adventure.

“Steal something?” Yi Nan was eager to give it a try after hearing it.

Yi Nan used to dress as a thief, but she had never stolen anything in her life.

With regards to the act of stealing, it was something that she would never do due to her excellent upbringing.

But she was not against Yue Yang doing it, because they were stealing from nobles. Those people were not good people, even if Yue Yang stole their things, it would still be considered as a heroic thief. Thus, she also became interested and decided to take this risk with Yue Yang, watch him take advantage of this crisis and get something out of it.



Yue Yang pulled her along, overturning trunks and boxes in various boat cabins, and obtained a number of gold coins that were scattered around.

But these mercenaries did not have a lot of money from the start, thus the harvest was not much.

It was very different in the boat cabins that belonged to the nobles in the upper levels. There were all sorts of rings and necklaces of various kinds, and even small amount of jewelries and branded alcohol. These nobles were enjoying the cruise so they did not expect something to happen on the boat, and rushed out, allowing Yue Yang and Yi Nan, these two thieves to profit from the incident. Yi Nan was smiling throughout the whole incident, because Yue Yang was a mean spirited individual, who threw out all the useless items, such as expensive clothes, shoes and hats out of the ship. This was the typical action of harming others without benefiting oneself.

After the number of thieves in the cabin increased, Yue Yang brought Yi Nan to hide from them, and returned to their own cabin.

They looked at each other happily.

Actually the things they stole were not very useful. Some could be traded for money, some were just decorations..... This was because the truly precious items were definitely with the nobles. Those could not be left behind.

But taking advantage of this crisis and getting something out of it was actually quite fun. When Yi Nan thought about how the thieves would not even find a single piece of clothing when they enter the nobles' VIP room, facing the boat cabin foolishly as it was totally cleaned out, she could not help but laugh. She was not interested in the big bag of accessories at all. She liked the mood when Yue Yang brought her to steal these items. Be it a good thing or a bad thing, he always held onto her small hands.

She would follow him like this for her whole life.

He, was like her other half.

Yi Nan looked at the items that Yue Yang stole, solemnly packed everything up, then opened up the boat cabin, and threw them out of the boat window.

She was laughing so hard that she could barely stand. She needed the support of his arm to be able to stand stably.

What a disgrace!

With Yue Yang's disturbance, both the thieves and the nobles would suffer big losses. The worst thing about this boy was that he threw out the large bag only after the boat was above a lake.

Even if someone saw it, it was unlikely for anyone to get anything back.

"How regretful that we didn't have enough time and only searched a few boat cabins. There were over 20,000 boat cabins, and the true VIP cabins were not on this side." Yue Yang purposely sighed endlessly. Yi Nan covered her small mouth with her hand and laughed for a long time. Finally, she stopped laughing: "there are guards at the 1st class cabins, we will never be able to go in. Moreover, it is not good to be greedy, we will be in deep trouble if we get caught."

"....." Yue Yang frowned. He realized that a thief was coming towards them.

"All of you come out and go to the deck. This is a robbery and I am not joking. Whoever does not listen to me, I will cut you with my knife." Few men dressed in black with a fiendish look walked onto this level, kicked down doors and went in, to search.

Actually, they were just searching through it roughly, and scaring people without thinking.

They initially thought that there was no one left in the normal

cabins, and were prepared to leave. But one of the guys was sharp and sensed Yue Yang and Yi Nan's life force.

After walking past the cabin door, he walked back with uncertainty, and burst out laughing once seeing Yue Yang and Yi Nan: "Gou Zi, Gou Zi, look what I found, a stunningly beautiful woman! My god, this is a human beauty, the human beauties we saw at Fei Yan City are uncomparable to her. Compared to this girl, those beauties were like dog feces!". Their companions also ran there noisily, crowded at the door like male wolves in oestrus.

Saliva was almost dripping out of their mouths.

A man with thorns all over his head stuck out his tongue and licked his lips: "too bad Big Sis would not allow us to rape, otherwise..... Anyways, let's just touch her secretly, Big Sis would not find out right? Er Mao, you can go be the lookout, we will break the rules today, and take liberties with this small beauty! It would be a let down to myself if I do not take liberties with such a beautiful lady!"

"Pa!"

A slap, landed on the back of his head.

One-eyed dragon appeared behind these people, and shouted loudly: "Scram, if any of you do anything, Big Sis would not even have to do anything since I will chop you guys up personally! I can pretend like I did not see it if it were other things, but if you guys dare to break the first rule, your punishment will be death!"

The thieves immediately became spiritless once they saw one-eyed dragon.

They quickly smiled, "Third Brother, we are just talking, and teasing her. We wouldn't dare to actually take liberties with this young lady.

One-eyed dragon kicked everyone of them, shouted loudly: "Scram, just looking at you bastards make me feel vexed."

When they left, he gave Yue Yang and Yi Nan a very kind smile: “Little brother, Little sister, I was looking for the two of you! Don’t be afraid, although I am a thief, I still have morals. We, the Raging Flame Bandit Group, are very famous. We never rape nor loot nor do things that harm others. We are top notch thieves! Who wouldn’t give us a thumbs up when they hear about us, the Raging Flame Bandit Group? Fat sheep that see us would not even be afraid for its life. We would only extort it for some money, negotiate terms under a friendly and warm atmosphere. We promise to never use violence.

Yue Yang’s face dimmed. It seems that one-eyed dragon had already noticed him.

However, Yi Nan did not have that much experience in the society and thought that one-eyed dragon was really taking care of her and Yue Yang, so she bowed slightly and thanked him: “Thank you uncle, we were not very afraid just now. You guys are really different from normal thieves. However, we do not have much money, other than 9000 gold that we won just now. Uncle, we are heading to Rainbow City later on, can you ask your boss if you guys can leave us some money. If it is possible, we will cooperate with you guys. If it is not possible, I am sorry as we will have to fight you!”

One-eyed dragon laughed: “No no no, little sister you are mistaken. I am not asking for your money, but to invite you two to join the Raging Flames Bandit Group. If the two of you work in the bandit group, you would get paid every month, get bonuses at the end of the year and after missions, have a working attire. Other than sudden missions, you would get days off twice a week. To sum it up, we treat our employees very well in the Raging Flames Bandit Group.”

Yue Yang and Yi Nan were stunned. Was this guy here to steal or to recruit people?

# Chapter 611 – Big Sis

---

On the deck of Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship.

The originally incomparably spacious deck had already been filled with people. Many of them were not dressed properly. It was obvious that they did not have time to put their clothes on properly while rushing to escape. However, all those people that escaped were captured back by the Raging Flames Bandit Group. Other than a few guards that were still defending till the end, majority of the crew and nobility's bodyguards had already stopped fighting and thrown their weapons on the floor.

Facing the Raging Flames Bandit Group, all kinds of resistance was useless.

That's because Raging Flames Bandit Group was one of the top ten bandit groups in the entire South Heaven Realm.

They normally do not attack people, but once the other side attacks, no one was currently able to defend against its fierce attack. With regards to the superpowers behind the scenes, Raging Flames Bandit Group would not provoke them. With regards to huge cities with a sufficiently large number of guards protecting, they would not disturb it but walk around it.

Raging Flames Bandit Group did not usually commit crimes. They generally aim for a target, plan before moving, obtain the loot, then hide in secret for a long time.

Originally, its the destruction they caused and influence on the masses was not enough to be considered part of the top ten.

The top ten bandit groups in South Heaven Realm were all very evil people that kill without batting an eyelid. They travel around South Heaven Realm, and everywhere they went, they were like locust, not even leaving a single strand of grass behind. Compared to them, Raging Flames Bandit Group's total bounty was just

barely 1 billion. Compared to the Skeleton Bandit Group which was ranked first with a 9 billion bounty and Blood Thorn Bandit Group which was ranked second with an 8.5 billion bounty, they were not even mentionable.

There were two reasons why the Raging Flames Bandit Group could squeeze into the top ten bandit groups of South Heaven Realm.

Firstly, it was because of their powerful leader 'Raging Flame'. Just Raging Flame alone was worth a bounty of 530 million gold. Raging Flame had attained the strength of Heaven Rank Level 5. This level was not something a city master, an feudal lord or even a small king was able to attain.

Secondly, under the Raging Flame there were actually 4 more Heaven Ranked Rankers. They had more Heaven Ranked Rankers compared to the bandit groups in the seventh, eighth and ninth rank.

One must know that Heaven Ranked Rankers represented hard power.

The Raging Flames Bandit Group consisted of 5 Heaven Ranked Rankers; Furthermore, the leader was a Level 5 Heaven Ranked Ranker. This, it was able to push down many large infamous bandit groups that were known far and wide, becoming one of the top ten.

Compared to large bandit groups that were able to send out tens of thousands of people, Raging Flame Bandit Group was actually considered very small.

Thus, the total number of members it had was not more than 3000 people.

"The one with the red hair is our Big Sis, she is the Raging Flame Leader that you guys are talking about. Don't look at her fierce face, she is actually very kind-hearted, positive, well-tempered,

brave, loyal and a very good friend.” One-eyed dragon introduced her like this. Yue Yang almost thought he was working for marriage agency.

“Lao San, are you saying bad things about me behind my back? Be careful that I might dig your eye out! How do I appear fierce? This is called character, I am going for that kind of character route, if you don’t know anything about it, don’t talk about it!”

A 3-meter tall female giant with bulged muscles that were robust as a tiger and riddled with scars walked over with loud thuds.

When she walked, there seemed to be an earthquake. Every step she took seem to shake the cruise ship.

She did not look too ugly.

Thick brows big eyes and distinct facial features portrayed her as a strong character, in addition, her faintly discernible scar was super cool. If her looks were on a man, Arnold Schwarzenegger would feel so inferior that he would hit his head against the wall. She was only wearing a black singlet, her strong muscles and abundant breasts seems as if they would burst out of the small singlet at any moment..... If there was something about this female giant that was very noticeable, it would be her hair that were like raging flames.

That messily curled and casually spread blood red hair seemed as if they were burning crazily like raging flames.

Anyone who saw it would gasp in surprise.

Because, this kind of beautiful hair that caused people to stop breathing would never grow on a woman who was more ferocious than a man, but hair that should belong to a goddess. What a pity, reality was too cruel. This woman with muscle all over her body and tough and stocky build, had raging flame hair that could make the sun lose its brightness.

This hair was not really flames.

But, it was more dazzling, more beautiful than real raging flames. It carried a mysterious magic, that give people a feeling that they would rather become moths and dive into that ball of raging flames without caring for its own safety. Even if they were burnt to death, they would have no regrets.....

Just because of this head of raging flame hair, this female giant, that was originally very ugly, had extra points as it gave others a feeling that she was not very ugly.

“?” Yue Yang realized, although this female giant was Heaven Ranked Level 5, if she fought with Hei Hu, who was of the same ranking, Yue Yang could bet all his family inheritance that she would win.

This female giant was totally different from Hei Hu.

Although Hei Hu was an elder of the Central Palace, it was obvious that he lived like a prince that rarely fought. Otherwise, how could he have gotten himself killed?

The female giant was the total opposite. Yue Yang believed that the female giant fought more than the amount of times a normal person ate. Even if she was just Heaven Ranked Level 5, once she used all her potential, he believed that she would be far more stronger than her level.

In other words, this female giant was like him, able to fight above their own ranks.

With regards to a female warrior that had so much experience in battles and returned from the brink of death on numerous occasions, Yue Yang was not confident in winning against her.

Heaven Ranked Level 6 Yan Zong, Yan Zun and others were powerful, Yue Yang was not able to win against them yet. But, he was confident that he would not lose within 1000 moves..... With regards to this female giant, Yue Yang was temporarily not able to make an estimate. Maybe he could tie with her, maybe not. Of



course the law energy was a different thing, since it was not something that Yue Yang had full control of.

The female giant was the first opponent that Yue Yang had not been able to fully see through since his arrival at Heaven Realm.

If he had a choice, Yue Yang would not be willing to fight with the female giant.

Regardless of who was fighting the female giant, it would definitely give people a headache.

Among the people that Yue Yang knew of, Xu Kong, Jiu Xiao and Ming Yue Guang, these 3 Heaven Realm Great Leaders do not even need to be mentioned. He also had not yet seen through all the cards in Scarlet Emperor's hands. Other than the 4 of them, there was only one person that could steadily suppress this female giant and that would be Zhi Zun! Other than Zhi Zun, it was believed that even Night Empress would not be able to win against her. Naturally, this female giant might also be unable to deal with Night Empress who possessed the Starry Sky Domain.....

A mere leader of a bandit group was so powerful?

Yue Yang sighed inwardly.

Heaven Realm was indeed full of rankers.

“These two are the new people? The young girl has a great potential, very good, with some grooming, I believe she could attain Heaven Rank. As for this young man... Oh, that's weird. I am unable to see through him. So strange, he seems weak yet strong. I am a Heaven Ranker, but how am I not able to see through this immature and inexperienced brat? This is truly weird, how could a human like this be born in the South Heaven Realm?” Female giant stooped down, her body casting a large shadow, covering Yue Yang and Yi Nan.

She first looked at Yi Nan and gave her a very good evaluation.

Then looked at Yue Yang, but started to frown.

Once one-eyed dragon heard this, he immediately started boot-licking: “Big Sis, with your all-knowing eyes that sees through everyone, how could you not see it? This guy must have some kind of Innate Skill, which also means that he must have a grimoire and his Innate Skill must be a concealing type; Thus, others are unable to understand.”

Yue Yang felt alarmed, this was the first time that someone managed to guess his gift.

Apparently, this one-eyed dragon was not a simple character, although he was not very powerful, but in the bandit group, he must be the knowledgeable one.

“You guys can call me Big Sis from now on!” Female giant gave up studying them as there were many things that were waiting for her to get done. She waved her hands and made the decision.

“We have not yet agreed to join.” Yue Yang expressed that he needed to think.

“What?” The female giant was immediately angered, used one hand to pick up Yue Yang, till he was right in front of her, used her eyes and glared at him: “Whatever I say is an order! No one is allowed to go against it, understand? I have chosen you guys, that means you belong to me and will be my subordinates. If you don’t agree, I will smash your balls, then throw you to the rocks so your brain would explode, I’ll see if you still dare to go against my orders!”

“.....” Yue Yang was stunned. So this was not really girl but a ferocious bandit.

“This sister, quickly put him down, you have a bad temper, so does he. You two should discuss things amicably.” Yi Nan was really scared that Yue Yang and this female giant would start fighting.

“Take note, I am not an older sister but a Big Sis.” Female giant

first corrected Yi Nan's words.

Turned around, and stared at Yue Yang again. This imposing manner was as scary as an axe violently chopping down.

She roared at Yue Yang: "What? A small lad like you dares to have a temper? Even if you do, you can't use it on me! I am the leader, the Big Sis. You guys are the subordinates, and will all listen to my instructions. If I tell you to go east, you would go east. If I tell you to go west, you would go west without any sort of hesitation, understood? If you dare to say that you are unwilling to join, I will strangle you till your death, then twist all your bones like a doughnut....."

Yue Yang started getting angry: "Other than rape, I am not afraid of anything. No matter how much you say, it's just nonsense. This is just a lousy bandit group, if I say I won't join, means I won't join.

Female giant was totally mad and stamped her foot hard on the ground, causing the whole cruise to shake.

She first put down Yue Yang, then crazily hit the bow of the ship till it became scrap iron.

When she calmed down, she waved her hands and ordered: "Trying to anger me? Not so easy! Lao San, tie this lad up, lock him up and starve him for a few days. Let's see how stubborn he can get!"

Yue Yang did not say anything, but gestured his pinky, showing that this method of hers was just child's play for him and it was useless.

But the female giant started to laugh: "You may not be scared of going hungry, but your lover is. You won't bear to let her go hungry, haha you still want to fight me? You are a little too inexperienced for me! Wait, you two are a couple, that makes things easier. I order the two of you to get married today, then I will adopt her as my younger sister. This way, you would be part of

the Raging Flames Bandit Group, and can't get away from us no matter what..... Someone come, prepare their wedding, I want to host a wedding that would become a sensation in South Heaven Realm.

“Yes, Big Sis!” Thousands of thieves that wished for the whole world to be in chaos replied loudly.

“Thank you sister; However, I want to ask him if he is willing first.” Yi Nan was happy and shy. Happy because she could hold her wedding with him in the Heaven Realm. Shy as this was too sudden and she was not mentally prepared. Joining the Raging Flame Bandit Group or not was all just a joke. She and Yue Yang were not citizens of Heaven Realm, they would go back to Tong Tian Tower in a few days, who knows what would happen then?

# Chapter 612 – Powerful Enemies Are Like Cloud, Happy Occasions Are Impossible

---

“You can’t even guarantee you own safety, what wedding.” Yue Yang laughed.

“What?” Female giant was stunned to hear that.

Immediately turned her head to look around.

Lastly, her face changed slightly, looking at the east.

In the clouds at the extremely far away east, a black spot appeared, then became clearer and clearer, transforming into a marshall clad in golden armor and riding a giant dragon. This marshall crossed his arms in front of his chest as he stood on the head of the giant dragon arrogantly. Numerous densely packed black spots, flew out from the clouds, turning into aerial knights that all wore silver armor.

This group of aerial knights totalled 10,000.

Their mounts were Thunder Griffins which had the head of a vulture, body of a lion, steel claws, iron tail and silver wings. A Griffin Army appeared bearing a distinct flag and clanking armor. When the bugle horn was blown, the great and mighty Griffin Army quickly split to two sides, forming a semicircle neatly like they were one, completely surrounding the cruise ship. They seemed to have rehearsed this millions of times, thus the interval between every individual, horsemen weapons, flag and cloaks were exactly the same. They were as silent as metal, carrying murderous looks. These aerial knights had such a strong rapport as if they were a single entity. It was clear that they were very well trained brave men.

“Ha! Ha! Ha!”

The golden armor marshall raised his right hand, the whole army started shouting, as their voices shook the world.

Then immediately, all of them stood in respect.

They were like steel troops, waiting for their next order.

More than ten of the silver armor generals stepped forward from the row. They followed closely behind the golden armor marshall, and flew towards the cruise ship simultaneously.

Yue Yang used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to tell that the 10,000 strong Griffin Army was composed of mostly Earth Rank Level 6 units. The silver armor generals were stronger, and the weakest few were already Earth Rank Level 8, while most of them were Earth Rank Level 9.

There were even 3 of them at Earth Rank Level 10.

Although they do not have grimoires, their abilities were comparable to the Emperor of the Underworld, Sky Emperor and Ocean Emperor.

“Thunder Griffins?” The female giant frowned and shouted: “Could it be that you, the subordinates of the self-proclaimed righteous Lionheart King, are trying to interfere with the Raging Flame Bandit Group’s business? Long Xiang, although you are the one of the three great marshalls under the Lionheart King, you only bootlicked your way up there, don’t think that you can interfere with my business with your little abilities! Scram now, or else I will not give you face even if you are the Lionheart King.....”

“The Raging Flame Leader’s title is well known in South Heaven Realm to the point that it could even stop children’s tears. However, let me say this, it might be easy for you to scare little children, but you don’t have enough qualifications to intimidate me!” The golden armor marshall arrogantly replied, while standing on the giant dragon head.

“Big Sis, things don’t seem to be going well, we should not fight the enemy.” One-eyed dragon’s eyes flashed as he quickly spoke.

“Don’t worry, it’s just one person Long Xiang, I can take him

down with one hand.” The female giant waved her hand: “You guys go prepare the wedding for that little sister. I will handle those puny Thunder Knights. Remember, whatever I say must come true.”

“It seems that today is a festive day for the Raging Flames. Hahaha, let this senior give a toast to the bride and groom.” A bald man descended from the sky like a meteorite, falling extremely fast.

Everyone thought the bald man was going to collide with the deck, even if he did not fall and become a meat pulp, he would put a hole in the deck and into the cabin.

Unexpectedly, this man turned over, the meteorite-like descent disappeared immediately, and he descended down lightly like a feather, his toes touching the deck, not stirring up any dust. His head was like a treeless hill, no grass grew on it. That bright and round head looked like a comical and funny big lightbulb in Yue Yang’s eyes. Other than the trademark bald head, the way he dressed was also very unique, he wore a very luxurious silver fur coat, like a gentleman; he was bare-breasted, showing off his thick chest hair, boorish like a barbarian.

He wore bright red pants, with a pair of black leather shoes with a pointed tip. His entire attire was extremely awkward.

What was most intolerable was that this guy wore different colored diamond rings on all of his ten fingers.

He looked like a country bumpkin who just became rich!

Of course, based on his appearance, this countryman who just became rich just looked like he was asking for a beating and did not look important.

In fact, this bald man who looked like a countryman who just became rich, was a notorious bandit for South Heaven Realm, his rank was higher than the female giant. South Heaven Realm’s

bounty for him was as high as 650 million.

“It’s you, baldy? You can walk your sunshine path while I walk my single-log bridge, why have you entered my territory?” The female giant’s face darkened. As if the appearance of Thunder Griffin’s commander Long Xiang was not enough, now the ‘Wise Demon Marshall’ that had a bounty of 650 million gold even appeared. The sudden change in reality caused her to start thinking and considering. If there were no special conditions, the self-proclaimed righteous Long Xiang would never work with the Wise demon marshall, this kind of demon. Were they coming for her? Or was there a royalty, who was concealing himself on the cruise and summoned Long Xiang for protection? Wise demon marshall always kept to himself, he might be trying to take advantage of the crisis for personal gains! “It’s just a wedding toast, why do you have to be so stingy, Raging Flames?” The bald Wise Demon Marshall laughed.

“Big Sis, there is a ghost down there.”

Two mercenaries dressed as Heaven Rank Rankers flew up from the bottom of the lake shore, rushing to report to the female giant.

Actually they did not need to report it, since the female giant already saw it.

In the forest on the lake shore, a ‘force field’ that was disguised by a Heaven Rank Ranker’s special treasure was removed. Numerous thieves that had a black head scarf tied on their head were waving black skull flags. They flew out like waves from the forest and there were tens of thousands of them.

Leading them was a skeleton man with a bent blade behind his back and a blade of grass held between his teeth. He did a few flips and landed easily in front of the female giant.

The skeleton man that looked like he could fall apart anytime, wore clothes that were tattered and torn, as if he just climbed out of a grave.



This skeleton man was really ugly, but he acted like he was a gentleman. First he bowed like noble to the female giant, then used an accent that upper class men used: “Duke Saul de Harmondale Edwards Mullifabel Rachel greets Raging Flame Leader. It’s been a few years, Lie Yan Group Leader. I have thought of you constantly. One day apart seems like 3 years. Raging Flame Leader, you are still graceful and beautiful. Under this sougning windy night, evening sunset, I can’t help but fall in love with you.”. “Pu!” Yue Yang spat once he heard it.

“.....” The female giant did not look happy at all, it was as disgusting as if she saw a maggot on the ground swaying its butt and crawling around.

In reality, there really was a maggot that climbed out of the duke’s nose. When it climbed to his teeth, the skeleton man opened his mouth and starting chewing on the maggot, as if he was eating a delicacy.

While he was chewing, a shaky tooth fell out by accident.

Skeleton man screamed, quickly picked up the tooth and turned around, using the robe to shield him from other people’s gaze, then carefully placed that tooth back into his mouth. Lastly, he bowed to everyone else, expressing his apology: “I’m very old, my body is rotting, my teeth are loose, I hope everyone will be understanding about my predicament.”

After saying that, he told out a silk handkerchief from somewhere, and wiped the non existent cold sweat from his head.

Yue Yang was speechless.

He made a hypothesis in his heart, that if he punched the two rows of teeth with his fist, he would be able to cause all the guy’s teeth to fly out. Then, let the guy pick the teeth up one by one by himself. That would be an incredible feeling.

Although this skeleton man looked dumb, his abilities were not

to be dismissed.

Skeleton man was ranked above the female giant. He was South Heaven Realm ranked number 9 'Black Skeleton Bandit Group's leader, Rachel. The bent blade on his back was the Holy Ranked Treasure 'Heartrend'. In the entire South Heaven Realm's top 1000 magic weapons handbook, it was among the top. The only regret was that this skeleton man, Duke Rachel, with 550 million bounty was weaker than the female giant although his bounty was slightly higher.

This was also why he purposely acted like he was of a lower position.

"Marshal Long Xiang is here, Demon Marshall is here, the Duke is also here, how can I not be here? You must know that this area is also a my occasional hunting ground!" A tall man dressed in colourful outfit like a clown appeared behind the female giant. Compared to skeleton man, his attitude was lower. This clown with a half smiling half crying silver face, bowed to female giant respectfully: "Big Sis, it's been long since we last met! Excuse me for not meeting you earlier. I did not know that you were hunting here, otherwise I would have come to welcome you."

"Go away, I am not your Big Sis, go die somewhere, you and your Clown Bandit Group has got nothing to do with me." The female giant laughed coldly, this was the first time she rejected someone calling her Big Sis.

"How sad, I fought by your side in the past. Although Big Sis refuses to accept it, I will always treat you as my Big Sis." That clown laughed evilly. One hand twirling the magic wand in his long fingers, the other hand was tossing a small tri-colour ball. He suddenly looked at Yue Yang and Yi Nan and laughed evilly: "It seems that you forgot me over the new recruits. No wonder Big Sis refuses to acknowledge me. These newbies are not bad, boundless potential, if these two newbies grow, they would at least be Heaven Rank, right?"

Yue Yang could sense from the clown's words that he had a strong desire to kill them.

Even though others had it as well, adding up everyone else's would not even be half of what the clown had.

He had a premonition.

This entire event could have been planned by this seemingly respectful clown. He was the one who caused all these problems..... As for the proud golden armor marshall, the sly baldy and the disgusting skeleton man, those were just helpers that the clown invited.

"Where is the wedding gown?" The female giant stretched her hand out, and one-eyed dragon quickly handed over the snow white wedding gown the subordinates found in the hold of the ship: "Big Sis, someone got married on the cruise coincidentally, but the wedding gown may not be suitable for the young lady." It was as if female giant did not hear him, took it, ignored everyone else, walked to Yi Nan: "Little sister, I want to give you a grand wedding as a gift, but now, it seems impossible. Although I am a chivalrous thief, I have many enemies, and some people that are not cautious will always come looking for trouble. Today, I am not able to honor my promise so I apologise. Little sister, you are not my people, what happens today has got nothing to do with you, you must live happily after you marry this lad. If he bullies you, look for me and I will beat him up for you!"

"Thank you big sister, it's the thought that counts." Yi Nan accepted the wedding dress emotionally. Although this was stolen, to her, it was the best gift ever. "Lao San, you guys will send them off personally. The activities of the Raging Flame Chivalrous Bandit Group will never involve the innocent." The female giant waved her hands, commanding one-eyed dragon and two Heaven Rank subordinates to send Yue Yang and Yi Nan off the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship. On the other hand, she turned and left, facing the enemies, she shouted in a bold voice: "Since you came

for me, then come forward! I will not disappoint you, who is up to commit suicide first?”

“No rush, no rush!” Skeleton man waved his hands and laughed: “these two newbies should not rush to leave yet as there are still many other people coming for the wedding feast.....”

More people were clearly appearing from the forest.

A part of the people were escorted there by others.

Among them, many were women and children.

# Chapter 613 – Betrayal, Plague Dragon Nail

---

When the female giant saw those women and children, who were detained, her face paled.

She clenched her fist, the imposing air exuding from her could almost destroy the heaven and earth. But she forced herself to hold it down, forcibly suppressing it.

One-eyed dragon and skinny mercenary took a look and knelt down, powerless. The reason was that they have realised that the women and children, who they hid, had all been captured by the enemy, not a single one was left.

Even among the two Heaven Rank Rankers, who had stayed back to keep guard, only one of them remained.

The other had already died in battle. His bloody head had been picked up by the enemy's spear. His eyes stared wide furiously, filled with remaining grievance....

Those Raging Flame members, whose morale were still high while surrounded by the Thunder Griffin Army and the Skeleton Bandit Group, dropped the weapon in their hands weakly at this point of time. For their family, for their parents, for their children, they could go through hell in war. Even if they died on the battlefield, their loved ones would receive money for their death. They had no worries living under the leadership of Big Sis.

But now that their loved ones had all been captured by the enemy, they could no longer wave the weapons in their hands.

“Big, Big Sis, I have wronged you!” That Heaven Rank Ranker who had been captured alive suddenly wailed loudly. He struggled desperately, but under the watch of as many as eight Heaven Ranked enemies, all of his struggles were completely futile.

Battered, he was sent to the feet of the clown. The clown used its extremely skinny and long leg to step on his head.

If this peak Heaven Rank Level 4 clown used just a bit of force, this Heaven Rank Level 2 man, who was heavily injured, would have his head explode and die..... Now, the clown looked at the female giant: “Big Sis, you must know that this humble one always listens to what you say. Now, what do you think we should do? The words that Big Sis say are cast in iron, this humble one will definitely listen!” His extremely long fingers spun skillfully and the magic wand in his hand spun extremely fast, showing his delight.

Skeleton man also expressed that it would listen to the female giant’s orders.

As it spoke, it used its finger to pull out a thick white maggot from his ear hole, and quickly stuffed it into its mouth while no one was watching.

As for the bald Wise Demon Marshall, he came out to smooth things out at this point of time, laughing loudly: “We should not trouble Raging Flame Leader anymore. Clown, it is also wrong for you to always detain people like that. No matter what, he is still Heaven Ranked. For you to detain him like such is rude. If word goes out, outsiders would think that the few of us ganged up to bully the Heaven Rank Raging Flame Leader! How about this, I will be the mediator. As long as Raging Flame Leader agrees to our condition, we will release him, and we can negotiate further. Cough, because Raging Flame Leader has a bad temper, should we use a ‘Plague Dragon Nail’ to prick the skin, and use pain to remind the easily angered Raging Flame Leader that as long as she does not act rashly, things can go smoothly. We will then immediately release him and make negotiations. Actually, this is not a big deal. We are all old friends and should easily enter discussions!”

“Wise Demon Marshall, even though you have detained our person, we have tens of thousands of people within our control. If we make this cruise explode, none of the ten thousand of people on the ship would be left.” One-eyed dragon shouted loudly, raising

the detonator in his hand.

“Huk!” The passengers on the boat were terrified. Their body all turned to jelly.

If these bandits were backed into a corner, they might do anything.

Many people were hoping for a negotiation, please do not be rash. Some people even cheered for Golden Armour Marshal, saying that they were some lord from some family, hoping to be saved for a hefty reward.

But Golden Armour Marshal stood still like a mountain, not moving an inch. He ignored all the shouts, as if he were a statue.

The clown, who was stepping on the Heaven Rank Ranker quickly spun his magic wand and ask the bald guy calmly amidst all the chaos: “Wise Demon Marshall, do you see any outsiders here?”

The bald guy shrugged his shoulders: “No, not one. Is there a boat here? Are the people on the boat? Why do I not see any single one? Duke Rachel, other than you and Black Skeleton Group and Clown Group, is there anyone else?”

Skeleton man grinned to reveal an entire mouth of black teeth, it replied: “There are. There are more than ten thousand aerial knights on Thunder Griffins. As for any cruise crew, passengers such, I do not see a single one. You all must know, I have no eyes, I am blind! To ask if I see any passengers, isn’t that nonsense? In my eyes, there is not a single person!”

The bald guy was very pleased with this answer.

He turned towards One-eyed dragon: “Did you hear that? There is not a single person here!”

One-eyed dragon was shaking in fury, yet he tried to suppress his anger: “As long as I press this detonator, there will be a boat here, and there will be people on that boat!”

Bald guy smiled and did not answer. He casually threw a long glowing blue nail in front of the female giant. This nail must be the Plague Dragon Nail he was talking about. With his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang could tell that this Plague Dragon Nail was the best weapon that could keep the female giant's power under control. Now, Yue Yang finally started to understand. There must be some ancient dragon's blood flowing within this female giant's veins.....

This 'Plague Dragon Nail' that was useless against normal humans, was the most powerful weapon against the female giant!

When One-eyed dragon saw this long glowing blue nail, he tightly squeezed the detonator and shouted angrily: "Shameless guy, how dare you try to harm our Big Sis like this? All of you, die, I will make this entire cruise explode and we will all die together!"

The female giant was now furious, she waved her hand: "Lao San, come here!"

"Big Sis, I used to listen to everything you say. But today, today, please listen to me this time. These people, their target is us. They just want to destroy us. If we want to turn things around, we have to do this, no matter how immoral. If not, us Raging Flames are done for!"

"I understand." the female giant nodded seriously. She first stretched out her hand to pat one-eyed dragon's shoulder: "Lao San, these years, you have silently worked hard for the group. I see it all in my eyes, and am grateful in my heart. You have done well, I am happy. But this time, you have done something wrong, I must make you realise your mistake!" She snatched the detonator over and crushed it in her hands, and slapped one-eyed dragon away.

Blood splattered through the air.

After one-eyed dragon crawled up painfully, the female giant ordered him to come over. She slapped him again, and the other side of his face swell up too: "Lao San, I must remind you one



thing: Even in the face of death, do not change your nature! Do you understand what I am saying? As a man, if you are indecisive, if you have no spine and cannot stand up for what you want, what is the point of being a man? A man must have spirit, you must have backbone, you must be strong and bear responsibility on your shoulders. You must have the capability to do big things. As a man, no matter what challenges and problems that exist in this world, you cannot give up, you have to face them! Only a fellow who is brave and does not lose his true nature in the face of adversity can be called a man, you understand? Those trash that kneel to surrender and only dare to bully those weaker than them, do they even deserve to be called men? Spit! Lao San, if you do not want to be a man, you can scram. My gang, even if there is only just one man, it is still stronger than an entire group of trash!”

“Yes!” One-eyed dragon’s whole face was bloodied, but he still tried to straighten his back and use his loudest voice to shout: “Reporting to Big Sis, you hit well. Lao San is not trash, Lao San is a man, a man made of steel!”

A dozen mercenaries who did not have families rushed out beside one-eyed dragon.

Under skinny mercenary’s lead, they stood behind One-eyed Dragon.

As for those members who are looking at the their loved ones being threatened with knives to their neck, they too wanted to stand alongside one-eyed dragon, but when they looked at the infants, who were raised high in the air and could be thrown onto the floor to their death, they could not help but stop in their tracks. They shut their eyes in pain, hot tears streaming down their faces.

They did not come forward to stand with one-eyed dragon, but instead all knelt on the ground.

What else could they do other than being the meat on someone’s

chopping block?

Yue Yang, however, was still smiling. At first, Yi Nan was very anxious, but she was not strong enough to help the female giant. She poked Yue Yang, at first she wanted him to console her. But now that she saw his smile, she calmed down immediately. She believed that her lover would never disappoint her, he was the most outstanding man in the whole world. Even in this adversity, he will have a solution. Even during desperate times inside the Prison Emperor Divine Palace and Death Arena, he had still been able to achieve the final victory.

She believed that will also be the case today.

She believed in him more than she believed in herself!

“Negotiation?” the female giant picked up the glowing blue Plague Dragon Nail and fiercely stabbed it into her shoulder. Her body that had been firm as a mountain shook momentarily, but she stilled quickly. She ignored the blood all over her body, as if this Plague Dragon Nail was stabbed onto someone else. She looked at the clown coldly: “I have damaged one of my arms. Are you content now?”

“?” Yi Nan looked at Yue Yang worriedly. But Yue Yang waved his hand casually, telling her to keep watching.

“Big Sis really is Big Sis, you are trully the symbol of brotherhood!” The clown stuck out his thumb. The magic wand in his hand spun a few times and he kicked the seriously injured Heaven Rank Eanker over to the front of the female giant: “I will release this one first. After the ox-clan brothers put down their weapons and tie their hands together, we will release the elderly and the children. You must know that there are too many Heaven Rank in the Raging Flame Group. Other than Big-Sis, the other two there are completely uninjured!”

“Tie us up!” Seeing the female giant shut her eyes, the ox-clan brothers that were not too impressive calmly stretched out both

their hands to allow the enemy's eight Heaven Rank Rankers tie their hands up with Touch Dragon Whiskers.

Anyway, there were twice as many Heaven Rank Rankers on the enemy's side, and they were higher ranked.

This battle will depend on how Big Sis negotiated, they were of no use now.

If Big Sis wanted to fight to death, they did not mind. They will definitely fight to the last drop of blood. But if Big Sis had chosen not to fight, they would also listen to her. One must know that since they had met Big Sis, they had never defied her orders.

The female giant bent down and helped the Heaven Rank Ranker up: "Fu Tou, it must have been hard on you. The battle from here on, leave it to Big Sis!" That heavily injured Heaven Ranker hugged her legs and bawled like a young child.

"You are grown up now. Stop being like a child. If Big Sis is not around anymore, you have to lead everyone, do you understand?" the female giant wanted to support the Heaven Rank Ranker called Fu Tou up. But then, the situation changed suddenly. The bald Wise Demon Marshall suddenly attacked. On the other side, skeleton man Rachel brandished his bent blade with lightning fast speed. But the fastest, was definitely the clown, his target was the already heavily injured Fu Tou.

"Careful!" One-eyed dragon warned, but it was already too late.

"....." Yue Yang saw a cold light flash. He wanted to help, but in that instant, he changed his mind. He decided to stay a spectator. The fight has just begun, it was not the time to reveal the truth. He had to wait until the truth was fully unveiled to attack. That would be the best timing.

"Ahhhhh!" the female giant swung her single arm and blocked the clown's attack. She then used brute force to shake the bald guy and skeleton man away.

However, at the same time, drops of blood dripped onto the deck.  
Her face filled with shock.

Not even in her dreams, would the female giant ever imagine that the comrade that she was protecting would stealthily attack her.

The other Plague Dragon Nail stabbed into her lower abdomen. The person who snuck the attack on her turned out to be Fu Tou who was heavily injured..... She had used her life to protect him, but in exchange, she received a fatal nail.

# Chapter 614 – Dance In The Air, Spirit Petals

---

The female giant's knees went weak, and she almost collapsed onto the deck.

But, she gritted her teeth.

Using her will that was stronger than steel, a staggering power exploded from within her. She supported herself with her limp knees and stood upright again. The Plague Dragon Nail that had entered her shoulder and abdomen had already poisoned her wounds blue. When faced with such a weapon, even though she was Heaven Rank Level 5, the female giant could not bear the pain.

“Clap clap clap!” the clown clasp the magic wand between his elbow and applauded in delight.

“Fu Tou?” The eyes of Ox-clan brothers whose hands were tied up with Touch Dragon Whisker turned red with fury. They roared like maniacs at Fu Tou whom they had once called their comrade.

“Big Sis.....” One-eyed dragon and the others wanted to rush forward to support the female giant. But she waved her arm and shooed everyone away. Surprisingly, the female giant was not angry. Instead, she calmly ask Fu Tou, who was stepping back slowly in shock: “Why? If I die, among the Raging Flame Bandit Group, you are the most powerful. You have the most potential. Sooner or later, you would be the leader. Why must you conspire with outsiders to harm me? What have I done wrong to you? Don't worry, I will not kill you. People like you, if I kill you with my hands, I would be dirtying my own hands. Now, I just want to ask you, why?”

“Big Sis, I don't want to die. They forced me, I had no choice!” Fu Tou bawled in shame.

“Can you not make yourself seem so pitiful?” the clown laughed coldly. His extremely long fingers pointed at Fu Tou and sneered

heartlessly: “Who was the one who caused all this trouble? It was you! If you did not come running into my territory, trying to snatch the beauty I had reserved, you would not have been captured by me. If you had not been so horny, and wanted to abduct the woman I was planning to gift Wise Demon Marshal, I believe Wise Demon Marshal would not have easily come into conflict with Big Sis..... Fu Tou, one word from me, it was you who caused this chaos. After being captured by us, who was the one who went on his knees to surrender. Who was the one who even leaked Raging Flame Group’s latest movements and their next hunt? It was you, you traitor! If you did not tell us their plans to raid the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship, Marshal Long Xiang would not even bring his troops here to rescue people. Fu Tou, you not only betrayed them and leaked their secrets, you also took the initiative to get on board the our plans. You killed your comrade ‘Deer Hunter’ and pretended to be heavily injured to use the Plague Drgon Nail against Big Sis..... Hahahahaha, such scum like you, compared to the past me who was chased out of the Raging Flame Group for being afraid of facing a strong enemy in battle, you are worse by a hundred thousand times. Big Sis, I have to say, this time, you made a wrong judgment of character!”

“You guys were the ones who forced me, everything was not my choice!” Fu Tou shouted hysterically. He realised the clown pretended not to hear him, and then cried to the female giant in repentance: “Big Sis, I reached Heaven Rank at such a young age. You said it before too, I have great potential. I have such a bright future, I really don’t want to die! They were the ones who forced me. Deer Hunter big brother was not supposed to die, but he refused to listen to me and even wanted to kill me. I had no choice, I did not kill him. They killed him together. I was only acting by the clown’s orders to chop his head down. At that time, he was already dead. Even if I did not chop Deer Hunter big brother’s head off, he would still be dead! And, plotting against you, it was their order. If I did not do what they said, they would have killed me.....

Big Sis, they have many people on their side, we cannot win this battle, let us surrender!”

“There is no we, there is only you!” One-eyed dragon spat: “From today onwards, all our ties are cut. We are no longer brothers with scum like you, but enemies until death!”

“I don’t want to talk to fools like you guys. You guys are not even Heaven Rank, do you think you have a right to talk? You lowly cannon fodder, what right do you have to criticise me? If it was you guys who had been captured, would you not have done the same as me? I bet you would do worse than me! One-eyed dragon, if not for what has happened today, you are all beneath me. Big Sis said before that she will pass the position to me in the future. You think I really wanted to surrender?” Fu Tou shouted at One-eyed dragon furiously.

“Understood.” the female giant nodded expressionlessly: “Actually, it is good that such a thing happened. At least now, I can see through people clearly. I hereby announce the disbandment of the Raging Flame Bandit Group. From now on, there is no more Raging Flame Bandit Group in South Heaven Realm. Ox-clan brothers, I recommend for you two to work under the Lionheart King. Even though he is the enemy, he is fair in his dealings. You two will not suffer under him.”

“No, Big Sis, we brothers will only listen to you. If Big Sis is no longer alive, we brothers cannot continue to live.” Ox-clan brothers fell to their knees on the deck.

“This is an order, I am not asking for your opinion.” The female giant shouted strictly like thunder shooting from the sky.

“Yes.” Ox-clan brothers kowtowed over and over again before standing up. They shouted to the crowd in unison: “If today we, Ox-clan brothers, leave here alive, we will seek revenge. Fu Tou, you will be the first!”

“.....” Fu Tou’s face paled slightly, but did not say anything. He

only stepped back quietly and stood behind the clown.

“Long Xiang, representing His Highness the Lionheart King, welcome Ox-clan brothers as one of the eight generals of my troop, bestowing the title of Barons and a manor in the imperial capital. As the commander-in-chief, I allow for Ox-clan generals to not participate in this battle.” That Golden Armor Marshall Long Xiang took in Ox-clan brothers on the spot. Even though the clown, skeleton man and bald guy were not happy with that, they did not want to offend the Lionheart King, who was one of the big guys in South Heaven Realm. Actually, the clown predicted that Long Xiang would disregard their former hatred. After all, no matter where they go, people will fight over Heaven Ranked Rankers.

“We thank the marshall.” Ox-clan brothers had intended to die. But now, they will live, because they had to seek revenge.

They understood Big Sis’ intentions. If they insisted on what they wanted, everyone here would die.

She chose to fight alone.

Now, although it was Ox-clan brothers’ wish to die in battle with her, there was still one person not dead. That person was Fu Tou. This guy was Heaven Ranked. Other than themselves, no one can seek revenge against him.

Ox-clan brothers decided to live on for now. After they had achieved their revenge, they will die for Big Sis.

The two brothers looked at each other and nodded.

They knelt and kowtowed, bidding the female giant farewell: “Big Sis, we will be leaving. When one day we obtain the severed head of the enemy, we will meet Big Sis again!”

To die in battle was easy and it would grant an extremely content death!

But, to keep on living for revenge was very difficult.



It was very bitter.....

Ox-clan brothers gritted their teeth. Under the escort of six Heaven Rank Rankers, they fought back the tears in their eyes and howled to the skies like injured wild wolves. They quickly left the cruise, and headed to the east following a team of aerial knights on Thunder Griffins.

For revenge, they were willing to serve the Lionheart King temporarily and give up the thought of fighting beside Big Sis in battle to their deaths.

“Are you guys leaving?” the female giant looked at one-eyed dragon and skinny mercenary.

“We..... Big Sis, please let us stay. As the leader of a chivalrous bandit group, how can you not have a few tiny soldiers die with you. Moreover, we are all trash. Even if we want to surrender, no one will give us a chance!” When one-eyed dragon said this, the comrades beside him all started laughing. They pulled out their weapons together, fearless in the face of enemies that were thousand-fold larger in number than them.

They were not even afraid of death, what in the world could scare them?

They were ready to die wholeheartedly.

What force in this world could stop them?

Those group members who were burdened by their family bowed their head in pain at this point of time. They wanted to fight too, but they could not.

Their loved ones were in the enemy's hands. If they even resisted a little, their loved ones would die. Most importantly, in the eyes of many members, this was a battle that would surely be lost. Even if they included the women, children and elderly, the enemy had more than ten times the amount of people on their side. No matter how hard they fought, it would all be useless sacrifices.

Moreover, Big Sis has already disbanded the group.

Now that even she had chosen to abandon the battle, what was there left to fight for?

“Bring it on!” the female giant pulled out the Plague Dragon Nail from her body, and threw the two bloodied long nails onto the deck. Fresh blood, blue with hues of purple, spout out from the holes in her abdomen and shoulder like a spring. the female giant remained expressionless and did not bother to wrap up her injuries, as if the injuries were on someone else’s body. She waved at the clown: “Attack me together, I want to see, who will end up as the terrified weakling that cushions the corpse pile! I will not brag, but I will at least be able to bring down one person, we shall see who is the unlucky one!”

“This humble one has always been extremely respectful and fearful of Big Sis. How could I possibly dare to touch Big Sis, don’t make fun of me.” the clown laughed sinisterly.

“That’s right, I too, have always admired Raging Flame Leader wholeheartedly.” Skeleton man answered along the same lines.

“Don’t get angry, Raging Flame Leader. Let’s take a seat and discuss it all properly. Raging Flame Leader, you are injured. You should receive some treatment, haha!” The bald Wise Demon Marshal was truly the most hypocritical. He obviously knew that the female giant had been stabbed by Plague Dragon Nail and was seriously injured. In fact, the plague was breaking out right now. He was deliberately dragging the time out so that he could attack after all the poison in Plague Dragon Nail has seeped into the bloodstream.

“.....” the female giant took a deep breath. Her body slowly increased in size. She knew that there was not much time left and was ready to fight to the last battle.

“Wait.” At this moment, Yue Yang suddenly came forward. He smiled and said: “I am sorry, I accidentally joined the battle

between you all. But coincidentally, I do have something to discuss with the Raging Flame Leader. I hope that everyone can give us a moment and let me cut the queue. Actually, I will not be wasting too much of everyone's time."

"It's you?" The clown's eyes revealed a strong desire to kill.

"What matter do you have with me?" the female giant was stunned at Yue Yang who had suddenly appeared. She quickly waved her hand: "Lad, you are not one of us, scram to the side, this is none of your business."

"Who says so?" Yue Yang objected: "You said that you will help us organise our wedding. Now that all our guests are here, you want to quit?"

"That's right, Sister, you cannot go back on your word!" Yi Nan smiled and nodded her head, playing by Yue Yang's story.

Everyone was shocked by Yue Yang and Yi Nan's words.

This young couple, were they not afraid of death? Even if they had not drawn the connection to the Raging Flame Bandit Group just now, they might still have been killed by the Black Skeleton Group and the Clown Group to silence them. But now, they even dared to stand out, disregarding the many Heaven Rank Rankers. Not to say a wedding, were the two of them seeking a death wish?

The female giant was immensely moved. She knew that Yue Yang and Yi Nan were supporting her.

Her comrades of many years in battle could not compare against some newly-met strangers.

She did not even know their names, it was just a single meeting, but at this most dangerous point of time, the two of them bravely stood out to support her.....

The female giant took a deep breath and suppressed the fire that burned at the bottom of her heart. Using her softest and gentlest voice, she said to Yi Nan: "Little sister, I cannot help you arrange

your wedding now. But I send my blessings and hope you two will be happy and safe forever.”

Yi Nan held onto Yue Yang’s hand.

With his support, she was filled with confidence and courage.

Yi Nan was not the least bit afraid despite facing countless strong rankers. Using a voice clear as a stream, her graceful words shocked everyone present: “If it is not convenient for Big Sister, then we are willing to help. We will let the guests who have come for a drink understand which kind of guests are welcomed. At our hometown, the dishonest people usually are asking for a beating. With a beating, they will become wise. I think that this method can also be used here.”

Yue Yang gave her a thumbs up.

After countless battles, Yi Nan this girl had become stronger. If this were in the past, she would not have possessed such courage.

Turns out, it was not just himself that had changed. Everyone had also grown.

Even Yi Nan, she too had become a warrior who is unafraid of anything!

Seeing his lover made such improvements truly warmed Yue Yang’s heart.....

The clown’s glare was scarily cold. He gently waved his hand and four Earth Rank Level 5 death warriors stood out, ready to crush Yue Yang and Yi Nan.

Just as Yue Yang was ready to attack, Yi Nan held him back with a confident smile: “Leave these few to me! I will leave the much stronger ones to you, I can settle these. Don’t worry, Night Empress and Fourth Mother have taught me some very special moves. I have not had the chance to show you, but with you here, I want to give it a go and see my improvements..... Bing’er and I, and everyone actually, have been training hard. Today, let me

prove myself!”

Yi Nan did not actually leave Yue Yang’s side.

She would not leave his side carelessly, she would not give the enemy a chance to ambush.

Moreover, her mental attacks could traverse space and distance. She could easily attack from afar with no need to leave Yue Yang’s side.

Gold rays shone when she summoned her Platinum Grimoire in an instant. When the four Earth-Rank Level 5 death warriors charged at them, Yi Nan calmly summoned Spirit Mirror, Hallucination Butterfly and her Guardian Beast, Small Fairy. But unlike in the past, she did not first use the attacking methods Yue Yang taught her, but instead used a method Yue Yang had never seen before.

She shut her eyes and stretched her hands out elegantly like a flower swaying in the wind.

All of her spiritual energy formed an arena similar to a domain.

Compared to the domains that Innate Level Fives were capable of using, this arena had a magical will that was similar to the Code’s power.

Even Yue Yang was stunned. He almost thought Yi Nan was using the Code’s power. But after sensing it, he realised that was not the case. It was a will similar to the Code’s power. It was very powerful but it was not as difficult to control and could completely be controlled by Yi Nan.

“Spread!” Yi Nan’s body spun beautifully, the energy around her body turned into flower petals dancing around her. About half a meter before the attacks of the four Earth Rank Level 5 death warriors reached Yi Nan’s head, they were all repelled by the flower petals formed from Yi Nan’s energy. Those seemingly harmless flower petals disregarded the strong bodies of the death

warriors and even their armor and sliced into their body.

In an instant, the spirit of these four death warriors were destroyed.

The power from their attacks were also absorbed by the beautiful flower petals turned into even stronger repelling shocks and threw those four corpses a hundred meters away.

Even though the four death warriors did not die, they have become empty husks. Their consciousness now completely cease to exist, only their physical bodies were left.

Such a defeat could be said to be ten times scarier than death!

Seeing Yi Nan's attack, everyone paled.

The clown even shouted: "The Code's power? What Code's power is this?"

# Chapter 615 – Man And Mirror Unite, One Hit Kill Master

---

A small and weak human being like Yi Nan instantly killing four Earth Rank Level 5 Death Warriors in one blow left everyone in shock.

Let alone the normal bandit group members, even the steel fort like Thunder Griffin Army appeared to be slightly shaken, with mild disturbance. The impact on their morale from the instant kill that surpassed ranks was definitely a hard one. In addition, everyone could see that this ‘small and weak female human being’ surprisingly possessed a Platinum Grimoire, what is happening?

There were countless Heaven Ranked Rankers who did not have a Grimoires.

Even if they did, they were unable to rise to the rank of platinum.

Yet, this female human being’s Grimoire was able to rise to the rank of platinum with just the realm of Earth Rank Level 1. If it continued to rise, wouldn’t it advance to a Diamond Grimoire, or even a Holy Grimoire?

The female giant gaped at Yi Nan, completely unable to believe what she just saw.

Even though she possess Heaven Rank Level 5 strength, she did not have a Summoning Grimoire. The small girl in front of her was so small and weak that a blow of breath could almost kill her. However, this small girl had a Summoning Grimoire. She was able to accept, barely, that the small girl had a Summoning Grimoire. She did have a huge potential after all, so being able to contract a Grimoire was not that surprising. What she was unable to accept was that the Summoning Grimoire in the fragile looking girl’s hands actually rose to the platinum rank. Evidently, this girl had went through countless battles and was definitely not as weak as

she seems.

The problem was, no matter how strong an Earth Rank Level 1 was, it was still impossible to instantly kill four Earth Rank Level 5 Death Warrior in one blow.

Could a small ant bite four lions to death?

Impossible!

“No, that was not the Code’s power, we did not felt suppressed, and the four people were still able to attack. That is proof that it was a unique power.” the Bald Wise Demon Marshall stroked his round and smooth head, and with a ghastly expression, he came to a conclusion: “This small girl is able to fight beyond her rank, and a close range fight warrants death.”

“Since we cannot fight in close range, then let’s do a long range fight then!” The clown’s eyes flashed coldly.

With just a pointi of his extremely long finger.

Another four Earth Rank Level 5 Divine Archers stepped out.

The four of them dispersed to a distance of 100 meters away at the same time, all with arrows nocked and bows drawn, aiming at Yi Nan.

Yue Yang realised that this bald Wise Demon Marshall was actually quite smart. He discovered the disadvantage of the type of force field Yi Nan used. When it came to disadvantages, this type of force field which contained a very strong will was indeed very small. It was only effective within 10 meter radius of Yi Nan. Even though Yi Nan had the strongest spirit power, the force field wielded was only 10 meters in radius as it required the mind to be very focused and even transform into flower petals. If it had been Yue Bing instead, the radius of the force field would only be one to two meters.

Of course, the advantage of this force field was very obvious too.



Similar to the Code's power, it was an unrivalled existence within the 10 meter radius. Enemies were unable to kill or injure Yi Nan as long as her spirit power did not run out.

Or, unless the enemy possessed an extremely strong Heaven Ranked power which could directly eliminate the force field formed by Yi Nan's concentrated spirit power...

For that, how strong a power would be required?

It was most likely impossible for an ordinary Heaven Rank and only a Heaven Rank Level 3 and above would be capable of such a feat. In addition, it must be an intelligent type Heaven Rank Rankers who possessed an extremely strong spirit power and not those Heaven Rank monsters born with Heaven Rank powers.

Yue Yang used Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to observe the enemy and discovered that the only people who had the power to destroy this type of force field were the bald Wise Demon Marshall and the clown.

The Golden Armor Marshall Long Xiang and Skeleton Man Rachel were both frowning, not perfectly sure of being able to destroy the force field.

Night Empress and Fourth Mother actually taught Yi Nan a secret move of theirs?

They had actually given her such a powerful spirit power force field? Was it only Yi Nan who possessed this power or did Princess Qian Qian and the others also possess it? Was the spirit power force field all they could do, or could they create other types of force fields? The more Yue Yang thought about it, the more mysterious he thought Night Empress and Fourth Mother were. Especially Fourth Mother, she obviously had zero fighting capabilities. Even when he observed her with Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he could only identify her as a 'normal person'. However, through her actions, she seemed to be more and more mysterious.

Fourth Mother, what was her true identity?

Yue Yang would never believe Fourth Mother to be a normal person. However, without her confession, Yue Yang had no way to confront her about it. He could only pretend to know nothing...

“Whoosh!”

Four sharp arrows flew swiftly like lightning, forming a trail of deathly light and fire behind them, shooting directly towards Yi Nan. No one present thought that Yi Nan would be able to dodge those four deadly arrows. Just a mere Earth Rank Level 1 human girl would definitely be instantly killed facing against four Earth Rank Level 5 Divine Archers. There wouldn't be an alternative conclusion.

These kinds of arrows, if used as an ambush during a battle, had the power to kill even higher levelled enemies.

This was because the arrows contained all of the condensed powers of these four archers.

Those arrows were unrivalled once released.

Yue Yang did not move a muscle. The female giant seemed like she wanted to step forward and swat the arrows away, but seeing that Yue Yang did not have any intentions to interfere in the battle at all, she forced herself to stay put.

Yi Nan spread her arms calmly and a brilliant Spirit Mirror appeared in front of her.

Just when all enemies thought the arrows would collide with the Spirit Mirror and cause an earth shattering explosion, a strange phenomenon occurred. Those unstoppable arrows that could penetrate even the hardest of iron walls just disappeared without a trace, as if they had never appeared before. Even the clown, skeleton man Rachel and Golden Armour Marshall Long Xiang widened their eyes, unable to find the whereabouts of the arrows.

“Reverse Mirror.”

Yi Nan touched the Spirit Mirror with her dainty fingers, and it rotated once.

Bright light shone out, blinding everyone.

Those four deadly arrows appeared once again, but this time, the direction they flew in had completely changed.

They did not fly beside Yi Nan. Instead, they shot out in the direction of the way the Spirit Mirror was facing. During the time that the four Divine Archers were too stunned to react, the four arrows streaked across like meteors, straight towards the four Divine Archers' foreheads, leaving blazing trails of fire.

There didn't seem to be much of a struggle as the four Divine Archers collapsed to the ground altogether.

Instantly killed.

The whole area was in an uproar.

However, in Yue Yang's eyes, Yi Nan's move 'Reverse Mirror' wasn't that weird. Forget about her Spirit Mirror's abilities, and her spirit power force field. Even when they were in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, Lei Shen Shi, who was still a powerful Innate Level 10 even if only his soul was left, wasn't able to hurt Yi Nan from a far distance with his Black Light. In reality, Yi Nan was unrivalled in long ranged attacks, but weak in close ranged attacks.

Yue Yang guessed that because of this, Night Empress and Fourth Mother taught her that kind of Code-like power, the spirit power force field, to protect herself.

"Once more, I don't believe it. Let's see how much difference in level you can overtake!" The clown was furious. He waved his hands sinisterly.

This time, two monsters stepped forward.

The two monsters looked like fleas and were identical to each other. There were round shields on their backs and short claws on

their hands. There were also special-looking bloody thorns on their elbows.

The flea monsters jumped very high towards the sky. They leapt around hundreds of meters high in the sky, as their feet stepped on empty air. It was obvious that they could jump in the air, and their speed became even faster the more they jumped. In the end, their movement became too fast that their bodies disappeared without a trace.

Most importantly, they were both Earth Rank Level 7. They were much more powerful than the Earth Rank Level 5 Death Warrior and Divine Archers. Any one of them would be able to kill Yi Nan instantly. The clown thought that even if this weak human girl could kill enemies of a higher level than her, there must be a limit to her powers and the limit would not be too far away. It was already unconceivable for her to kill Earth Rank level 5 enemies.

Would she be able to kill these Earth Rank Level 7 enemies?

Even if she could, she would need to give it her all, right? In the Clown Bandit Group, how many Earth Rank Level 7s were there? There were at least 3000 of them, how many could she kill?

The clown had confidence that with the Flea Brothers' lightning fast jumping power, Yi Nan wouldn't have the time to use Reverse Mirror or other kinds of attacks. It was also because the way they fought was unique and different compared to the close-ranged and long-ranged attacks from just now. Forget about counter-attacking, Yi Nan should have difficulties defending against them. This was because she couldn't see the Flea Brothers' movements at all... All it would take was for her to slip up once and make a wrong judgement for it to become her last day, because the Flea Brothers were experts in catching weaknesses.

"Spirit Mirror Reveal." The Spirit Mirror in Yi Nan's hands shined brilliantly. Suddenly, the brilliance shrunk and concentrated its luminance on the two crazy leaping shadows in

the sky.

No matter how fast the two shadows moved, they were not fast enough to escape the brilliant rays of the Spirit Mirror.

The two shadows moved even faster, leaving dozens of afterimages of themselves across the sky.

It was absolutely impossible to differentiate the real from the fakes with the naked eye.

All that was seen were flashes of movements, there a second and gone the next.

More shadows continued to move differently.

Yet, those who were careful could find the trail of an obvious pattern. It was that the two beams of light from the Spirit Mirror were always on the same two shadows. No matter how they moved, appeared or disappeared, they were always accompanied by the two light beams, unable to escape from the light.

“Spirit Absorption...”

Yi Nan stretched out her hand, guiding the Spirit Mirror remotely.

The beautiful movements of the two shadows captured by the light could not help them escape. They were dragged helplessly out into the sky as they slipped toward the surface of the Spirit Mirror.

The Flea Brothers tried to struggle free from the light rays but found it to be impossible. The pull was within them, in their soul and their bodies would not listen to their will.

All they could do was to intensify their struggle while they were slowly pulled in. This would help them produce more resistance to further slow down the pull and also coagulate their powers for a thunderous attack when they get close enough. Clown's, Skeleton Man Rachel's, the bald Wise Demon Marshall's and Golden Armour Marshall Long Xiang's expressions turned ghastly as this

kind of pull on one's soul terrified them.

Luckily, the pull on the souls was extremely slow.

Moreover, the Spirit Mirror needed to reveal itself before the light rays can lock onto the target and only after ensuring that there would be no struggle could the pull on one's soul be exerted. Otherwise, this type of special skill would be the nightmare of all Heaven Ranks.

"To hell with it..." Seeing their unfavourable situation, the Flea Brothers were going to self-destruct and kill themselves.

"Paralyze!" Yi Nan pointed and the Hallucinatory Butterfly sprinkled a cloud of rainbow colored pollen.

In the next instant, the Flea Brothers, who were increasing their powers to fight it out with Yi Nan became zombies, at the mercy of others. Their bodies were so numb they could not even blink, much less move their fingers. Yi Nan then used her Spirit Petals to completely disperse their explosive energy. A burst of beautiful petals blew past and the Flea Brothers' bulging bodies withered rapidly... The Hallucinatory Butterfly grabbed them with her hands and twinkling red lights shined in her palms. Her palms started to absorb as the flowing energies in the Flea Brothers' blood surged out violently, coagulating into two blood spheres.

Despite being Earth Rank Level 7, the Flea Brothers rapidly fell in their ranking due to the withered energy in their bodies and the loss of power in their blood.

Under everyone's eyes, they started falling continuously from Earth Rank Level 7.

Earth Rank Level 6, Earth Rank Level 5...

The Hallucinatory Butterfly sprinkled another cloud of grey pollen. The Flea Brothers were enchanted by the pollen and in a flash, they saw the most terrifying in the world.

All the muscles in their body twitched frantically, their pupils

enlarged. At last struggling free of their paralysis, the Flea Brothers tore at their faces with their claws as if there were horrible creatures gnawing at their faces... As everyone watched, the Flea Brothers tore off their faces before crushing their own skulls ruthlessly.

Before they died, one of the Flea Brothers seemed to feel its fists were too slow and fished out a large hammer, forcibly smashing its head to pulp.

“Ah!”

Now, the gazes at Yi Nan were no longer doubtful but full of fear! Many of them were not afraid to die.

But they were afraid to die such a terrible death.

Earth Rank Level 7, being toyed to death without any means to retaliate, it was just too tragic.

“Mirror Realm shatter!” Yi Nan clenched her fist suddenly and the Spirit Mirror before her emitted a crisp tinkling sound of glass shattering. The surface of the Spirit Mirror remained as smooth as ever but the world inside the mirror had shattered into smithereens. No one understood her actions but the answer was revealed right away. Two transparent shadows were standing three meters away behind Yi Nan and Yue Yang.

They were prepared to attack when they suddenly turned rigid after being revealed.

They fell simultaneously fell dead on the ground..

When the Mirror Realm shattered, those who had their souls absorbed by the Spirit Mirror would die from the weaknesses in their spirits.

Others would never understand how they died, but to those who died, it was equivalent to bearing the punishment of the Code's power from the Virgo Palace of Tong Tian Tower's Twelve Zodiac

Palace.

“Damn it, this is real power of the Code!” The clown was shaking with fury. He had never been this furious in his entire life. To think that this ‘weak little girl’ possessed a Spirit Mirror that could enforce the Code’s power. Although such power was very limited and only a form a defensive spiritual attack, it was still the Code’s power, the unopposable Code’s power!

In other words, in order to kill this woman, unless there were no weaknesses in a person’s spirit, both parties would definitely suffer great damage as the person must suffer punishment of the Code’s power from the Spirit Mirror’s protection.

The two men he sent to ambush them had died silently from the weakness in their spirits...

Whether it was the Black Skeleton Group or the Clown Group, or even the ship’s crew or guests, they were so afraid that they distanced themselves from Yi Nan.

This was too scary. This human girl was simply a death god, who controlled souls.

However, the death god like existence that was Yi Nan suddenly threw herself into Yue Yang’s embrace. Since her spirit power had been used up, she embraced Yue Yang’s waist, buried her head in his chest and muttered tiredly: “I’m sorry, I could only fight to this extent right now. I will rest for a while and could only watch you fight!”

“No problem. Your improvements had already far surpassed my expectation. I was pleasantly surprised. Rest well my darling and leave everything to me!”

Yue Yang lightly caressed Yi Nan’s hair as his face showed an exceptionally gratified smile.

It seems that Yi Nan, who he was most worried about, had already reached the point where she could take charge of



herself.....

# Chapter 616 – As Mysterious As A Riddle

---

When Yue Yang stood out, Yi Nan slightly retreated.

Although the wedding dress did not fit her, she still took a strip of white muslin from it and wrapped it around her neck.

There were thousands of enemies surrounding them and tens of thousands of strangers watching them. They were currently in Heaven Realm and not at home, but Yi Nan still wanted to be married to him at this moment, becoming his new wife. The wedding dress and the ceremony did not really matter, as long as their two hearts beat as one, even Hell would become Heaven. She hoped that she could carry the image of a new bride, standing behind him.

Supporting him.

Supporting her husband.

With ten thousand enemies in front of him, he still went forward without a sign of retreat..... This great hero was the one she loved, her lover!

“I will support you no matter what you do!” Yi Nan looked at Yue Yang and reminisced the day they met, the details of their meeting. Her heart filled with happiness, and her entire body was filled with comfortable warmth. She firmly and confidently nodded her head at him: “I will stay here, watching you, waiting for you! Whether it’s today or in the future, whether it’s in Heaven Realm or elsewhere, I will always accompany you.”

“Okay.” Yue Yang did not say much. He extended his hand and stroked her soft hair. He lowered his head while holding her in his embrace, going towards her petal-like tender lips, and lightly kissed her.

He then gave her a smile.

He confidently turned around, facing the numerous enemies, and

raised Crescent Moon.

His words were simple but the intent behind them was clear: “I will only say one thing, those who want to join the wedding feast can stay, those who don’t can just beat it! Those who want to look for trouble should ask the blade in my hand first.”

Without Yi Nan’s shocking performance, the people there would probably laugh their heads off after hearing Yue Yang’s words. A puny Earth Rank Level 1 human actually wanted to face thousands of enemies that were a lot stronger than him? Could it be that he was making a death wish? Was he crazy or mentally ill?

But after experiencing Yi Nan performing instant kills that surpassed levels, they began to feel that this boy should not be so simple.

His strength should be higher than the girl.

The entire place was quiet as no one dared to reply to Yue Yang.

Forget about the Heaven Ranked, if normal people speak and instantly die under the boy’s blade, it would be too tragic!

Actually, if it was not because they could not see through his strength, the clown, Skeleton Man Rachel, the Wise Demon Marshal and the others would have already flipped out. But, this human boy was too strange that no one could see through his strength.

An experienced person could also make mistakes, that’s why the clown and the others were being cautious.

After all, stalling for time was much more advantageous for them.

“This duke loves to toast with young people the most. It cannot be avoided that I would stay for a drink.” Skeleton Man Rachel looked at the clown and decided to do something. Otherwise, it would obtain nothing when they were going to share the loot. It first used its bony finger to loosen his gums and arrange its

crooked teeth. Then, it brought out a snow white handkerchief to wipe his hands like a noble man. Behind him, two bandit leaders walked forward, their strengths were at Earth Rank Level 8, carrying with them an unusual presence. They stood out the most among the enemy with regards to strength and level.

“Where’s the wine? We also want to drink a cup.” Although the expressions of the two bandit leaders were slack, they were secretly on alert, guarding against Yue Yang’s attacks.

“You want to have a toast with me?”

Yue Yang sneered: “You are not qualified!”

When his words had just left people’s ears, his figure moved towards one of the bandit leaders.

These two bandit leaders were seasoned warriors with rich battle experience. The moment they saw Yue Yang attack, they immediately split apart. The bandit leader that Yue Yang charged towards immediately brought out a huge ax and directly face Yue Yang’s attack. The other bandit leader took a crafty detour and charged towards Yi Nan, preparing to ambush her and strike at the weakness.

The female giant thought of intervening, but after seeing Yi Nan’s relaxed appearance and disregarding the enemy’s attack without defending, it was clear that she truly believed in Yue Yang.

She suppressed her urge to rescue her and continue being an observer.

Not only her, even the Heaven Ranked Rankers including the secretly furious clown, the prideful Long Xiang, the disgusting Skeleton Man, and the crafty Wise Demon Marshal, all quietly observed. Their gazes were firmly locked on Yue Yang with the intent to see through all of his cards in this exchange.

A normal person could not even see anything, they could only see flashes of light.

Only Heaven Rank could see the changes in the battle..... Yue Yang's speed and power, which were originally Earth Rank Level 1, increased in a split second, 100 times, 1000 times, 10000 times. He was originally as slow as a snail but it continuously increased, and in the end, reached a speed 100 times faster than lightning. When you looked at the originally lightning fast bandit leader and compare it to Yue Yang. you could only see that the bandit leader was even slower than a snail. Before his ax was even brandished, Yue Yang was already in front of him.

Moreover, Yue Yang instantly passed through his body and made a beautiful turn to chase after the other bandit leader, who went to ambush Yi Nan.

The leader felt that something was wrong and hurriedly looked back.

He saw nothing behind him but when he looked to the front, he suddenly found Yue Yang standing in front of him, as if he did not even leave Yi Nan's side.

The Skeleton Man Rachel did not even need to look to know that its two subordinates were finished. But, when it looked at them, he became more shocked because it discovered that its subordinates were not instantly killed but sadistically killed.

The leader that had an ax still did not know that the enemy had passed through him and continued his chop.

Immediately, his body became minced meat. Armor, flesh, meat and bones, they all scattered on the ground following the strength of the ax. Only a person who had reached Heaven Rank could see what he really did. Yue Yang only needed on beautiful slice to separate the skin and bones without even touching the muscles and bones. Even the best chef in the world could not reach this kind of level when butchering a cow.

However, an Earth Rank Level 1 human was actually able to turn an Earth Rank Level 8 into countless pieces of meat in front of

everyone.

This kind of skill would even earn an applause from the clown and skeleton man if Yue Yang was not an enemy.

But now, their mouths seemed to have eaten a gall bladder, so bitter that they were completely speechless.

The other leader that wanted to ambush Yi Nan was frightened to the point of retreating. He quickly retreated beside Skeleton Man Rachel, only then did he pat his chest and sigh in relief.

However, this pat was fatal.

In an instant, an extremely small red scar appeared on his neck. It was originally invisible but it gradually turned into a red line and immediately burst, letting out an unstoppable blood fountain. In the end, when the bandit leader thought of covering the wound with his hands, his head soundlessly separated from his body and fell on the ground, rolling away a few meters, frightening everyone there.....

The headless body spurted blood into the air. The hand that wanted to cover the wound was still there with a frightening posture, making everyone's hair stand on end.

It seemed that until the end, he still did not know that he had been beheaded!

The commander of the Black Skeleton Group, Skeleton Man Rachel, was an expert in blade handling. With Heartrend in its hand, beheading people or cutting them to pieces was an easy thing to do. However, it admitted that it could not do it as confidently as Yue Yang. In front of the thousands of observers, in front of the oppression from the countless Heaven Ranked Rankers, being able to skillfully insta-kill and cut his enemy was something that it could not replicate.

Skeleton Man Rachel begun to admire Yue Yang to some extent.

Because in using blades, Yue Yang had already turned killing

people into a piece of art.

It was something that it could never do.

“.....” The magic wand in the clown’s hand stopped being turned around. He tightly grasped it as his fingers turned pale from the excessive amount of strength he put in.

“What a fast balde.” The Golden Armor Marshal, who was standing proudly on the giant dragon’s head, suddenly flew over and landed on the ship’s deck. A strong interest was born as he found Yue Yang a hard to come by rival.

“That guy had been killed by 3600 slashes, but I like the chop on the neck of that other guy.” The bald Wise Demon Marshall rubbed his shiny head as he inspected the two corpses. Then, he extended his hand on one of the meat piece, threw it into his mouth and chewed it. In the end, he gave a final verdict: “Oh! I finally understood. The meat was cold to prevent blood from flying out. The boy used the ice attribute of his blade to beautifully and temporarily freeze the neck and the head together. As a result, it did not fall down with any movement, but the energy usage was small and the temperature control was extremely good. Thus, when we saw him pat his chest, his head immediately fell. I cannot help but say that this move is worthy of praise.”

“In the future, I will definitely use a perfect slice to kill people with all my skill.” The Skeleton Man expressed that this move was too cool and that he would learn to use it.

“That’s right, this is a supreme feat!” The Golden Armor Marshall Long Xiang also nodded his head.

“Are you guys finished or not? What we should be doing now is not discuss how beautiful the cut is. In front of absolute power, skill is nothing. What we need to do now is to get rid of the brat and eliminate future threats.” The clown crazily screamed.

“It would be difficult for a normal person to kill him.....” The

Wise Demon marshal frowned as he felt that he needs to dispatch a Heaven Rank Ranker.

“Please let this subordinate give it a try!” An aerial knight came down from a Thunder Griffin. He was one of the Earth Rank Level 9 silver armor generals following Long Xiang.

Normally, an Earth Rank Level 9 aerial knight fighting an Earth Rank Level 1 civilian would be called bullying. But, everyone felt that the aerial knights behavior was deserving of praise. This was because no one was optimistic about him. Even if he was an aerial knight, even if he was Earth Rank Level 5, even if he wore a strong silver armor, no one believed that he could win.

One-eyed dragon and the skinny mercenary were beginning to get used to Yi Nan and Yue Yang killing above their levels.

They were secretly making bets.

But, they were not betting victory or defeat because they felt that Yue Yang would definitely win. They were betting on how long the enemy would survive. The skinny mercenary felt that one minute was enough, but one-eyed dragon felt that it only needed 30 seconds.

Long Xiang’s prideful face changed and turned into one with a bit of hesitation.

He knew the special abilities of his subordinates. This subordinate did not feel any fear of receiving injuries. No matter how many pieces of meat was cut, he would immediately recover his original appearance. He was also not afraid of being beheaded because once his head was placed back on his neck, he would return as before. Even if his subordinate had this special recovery ability, Long Xiang did not believe that his subordinate would win.

This was because the boy in front of him was too strange. With so many Heaven Rank Rankers looking at him, no one could see through him at all.



What was the actual level of this boy?

Long Xiang was unable to guess it.

“Please enlighten me!” The aerial knight thought that he was accepted while Long Xiang was still pondering over it, so he confidently went ahead and walked facing Yue Yang. He raised his knight sword above his head and slightly greeted him. Then, he quickly spaced out to start the battle. It could be said that his movements were all perfect. Whether it was his vigor, confidence, to attitude, they were not weak. He raised his strength and body’s state to its peak. In addition, he used his best and most defensive stance. If it was another opponent, not even an Earth Rank Level 10 could break through his defense.

“Get lost!” Yue Yang only made simple move which was outside of everyone’s expectation. They only saw him use a flame whip to hit the aerial knight’s body.

The aerial knights body seemed to be uninjured but he flew ten meters away.

At the beginning, he was still able to gradually stand up, as if nothing was wrong with him, and he still wanted to fight.

But very quickly, his body began to tremble fiercely as if he was enduring an unimaginable pain.

Large beads of sweat seeped out from his forehead. He gritted his teeth as blood begun to pour out. In front of the thousands of terrified gazes, the aerial knight’s trembling body slowly kneeled down. His hands deeply scratched the deck with the intent to endure the tormenting pain.

However, it was useless as flames came out from his nose and mouth.

The Heaven Rank Rankers could see that these flames came from within him.

And immediately, the aerial knight’s endurance crumbled as he

painfully howled towards the skies.....

AAAAAH!

AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA.....

The aerial knight, who would not even bat an eye to any injury, who was the most prideful knight due to his strong will, was now kneeling in front of the enemy while howling. This was the first time this happened in history. Actually that aerial knight kept enduring it, but he was unable to persevere anymore. This was because the pain that he felt was not only pain from the body but also the mind and spirit were whipped. Even if his internal organs were not on fire, he would still be unable to endure it.

Being able to endure not groaning for more than ten seconds was already above normal people. It was already the limit of his steel-like will.

Hearing the aerial knight's howl, the entire Thunder Griffin Army's troops turned pale in fright. They truly could not imagine what kind of attack could deal pain that not even an aerial knight could endure.

Long Xiang complexion instantly changed. He once again re-evaluated Yue Yang.

However, he still could not see anything.

This youth was as mysterious as a riddle!

# Chapter 617 – No Such Thing As The Craziest, But Only The Even Crazier

---

Long Xiang waved his right arm and countless rays shone from within his hand to strike the howling aerial knight, making him lose consciousness.

Immediately, two aerial knights came forward and carried their unconscious comrade away.

At the side of the aerial knights that were mounted upon Thunder Griffins, there was no longer anyone who came out to battle. Even if they sent someone out, it was no use. The only reason why they still had not sent out large troops to attack from all sides was because they could not let go of their pride. The honor and pride of a knight made them unable to attack a human who was only Earth Rank Level 1 together. This holds even though this human had perverted abilities that far exceeded his opponents.

Skeleton man Rachel also retreated.

Even though it was from Bone Clan, and had the form of a skeleton, that did not mean it was stupid.

In reality, this guy, compared to the other Bone Clan member Weng Jin, whom Yue Yang also knew, was much more cunning.

Now that two leaders of the Black Skeleton Bandit Group died, Rachel had done all that Earth Rankit could. Even if clown was unhappy, he could not do anything. After all, to let his follower die for nothing was not something even a fool would do.

“Hehehehehe!” From behind his half smiling half crying mask, the clown suddenly let out a chilling laugh. His laugh, was definitely not one of joy, but one of immense fury. Facing Yue Yang and Yi Nan, this pair of human, who were able to affect his entire plan, it would be a lie to claim that the clown was not furious. He had thought that this battle would mean he could

successfully get rid of the Raging Flames Bandit Group and eliminate Raging Flame Leader, who was such a huge problem. He would never have thought that at the last moment, such a teeth-grindingly hateful thing would happen.

He twirled the magic wand in his hand quickly, as if such an action would help him think.

On his other hand, he nimbly threw a three-coloured ball.

Was the clown himself going to attack?

Everyone was confused. Could it be that a Peak Heaven Rank Level 4 ranker was going to attack an Earth Rank Level 1 civilian?

Under normal circumstances, everyone would be roaring in laughter and no one would believe it. But under these circumstances, everyone thought that it seemed pretty normal.

Only the clown, a Heaven Ranker, would be able to defeat the abnormal youth with perverse ability..... Of course, if a Peak Heaven Rank Level 4 ranker the clown were really to attack, it would still be ridiculous! Peak Heaven Rank Level 4 was almost equivalent to the existence of a Heaven Realm King. For such a person to attack a commoner, even if he emerged victorious, he would be said to have had an unfair advantage.

“You all are after me, come at me while I still have some strength!” Female giant walked out thumping.

Because of the Plague Dragon Nail, majority of her ability was already reduced.

Not to mention the Wise Demon Marshall, who was originally the same rank as her, even skeleton man Rachel, Golden Armor Marshal and the clown who were inferior to her could defeat her easily. Even though the female giant had the blood of an Ancient Dragon, the Plague Dragon Nail that was harmless to normal people, was her greatest nemesis.....

All of the blood in female giant's body had turned into a purplish-

blue by the Plague Dragon Nail. Her skin that was originally tough as steel was dotted with corrosion by the Dragon Plague.

If this dragged on, in less than an hour, she would collapse to the floor.

Even without a battle, she would be on the brink of death.

This female giant, whose entire body was consumed by the Dragon Plague, was almost completely drained of power. What remained unchanged was her hair that was like a raging flame. It blew in the wind gently, like a flame burning. None of the Dragon Plague's negative side-effects could affect its shape. Female gragon looked at one-eyed dragon and skinny mercenary, who have followed her to the end, and did not say a word. She then looked at Yue Yang and Yi Nan, nodding her head, she said: "I am truly thankful to you two. Even though we do not know each other, but just this single meeting has shown that you two are better than those friends whom I have lived with and fought with. I am delighted that I have gotten to know you two. Actually, life is as such. As long as we do things that we are unashamed of and live with no regrets, it is enough! Goodbye!"

Female giant shouted loudly, all of the muscles in her body expanded and her height dramatically increased with her bones echoing.

Within seconds, she rose to four meters tall.

Her ability also restored to peak state temporarily.

With just one step, the entire Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship shook. A loud sound also echoed from underneath her feet.

From underneath her feet, a crack that was hundreds of meters long appeared on the deck. It went deep into the hundred storey hold of the ship, all the way to the bottom of the ship made of dragon bone. With the booming explosion, the huge bow of Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship was completely stomped by her.

The front of the ship's bow snapped off completely, and lost its support. It tilted greatly and fell directly towards the lake thousands of meters beneath.....

Countless people started screaming in fear.

As for the rankers who were on the ship's bow, they were desperately fleeing for their lives. If they fell with the broken ship's bow into the lake, other than Heaven Rankers, no one else would survive. Although the lake beneath looked beautiful and clear, it was an infamous man-eating lake. Beneath the lake was the boundary of death. Any prey that fell into the lake would become confused and disoriented, before they could escape, they would be torn to pieces by the man-eating demon fish and be buried in its stomach.

Long Xiang remained in the sky. He waved his hand and all the aerial knights mounted on Thunder Griffins swooped down in unison.

They were in charge of saving those passengers who had fallen but were unable to escape. At the same time, they were keeping an eye on those Raging Flame Bandit Members to prevent them from escaping in the chaos.

The Clown Group and Black Skeleton Group members were keeping their hold on the women, children and elderly from the Raging Flames Bandit Group. With their large number of people, they formed groups and flew away.

Only a few members who were of low rank pathetically escaped while the ship's bow was falling.

They were terrified of falling into that man-eating lake with the ship's bow.

Wind blew through the ship's bow as it fell towards the lake.

The clown, skeleton man Rachel and Wise Demon Marshall remained still from their original positions.

They stared at the female giant coldly.

It was as if such a move of breaking the ship's bow to cause chaos was completely within their expectations. Yue Yang and Yi Nan were exactly standing at the edge of the split. Right by their feet, was a neat breach. Female giant had done this deliberately. She wanted to keep Yue Yang and Yi Nan on board, while she would die with the enemy.

“You two can leave, I have no intention to attack you two.” Long Xiang who stayed to keep watch of Yue Yang stated his stand.

Actually, he really admired Yue Yang and Yi Nan. He felt that both of them had unlimited potential.

Although they appeared to be Earth Rank Level 1, in reality, both had combat power that were well beyond their rank.

If not for such a hostile situation, Long Xiang would convince them to follow the Lionheart King and use their country's best resources to groom them both. He believed that if Lionheart King knew of the two's existence, he might accept both of them as his own disciples and even bestow them the status of dukes. But now that they were enemies, even if Long Xiang wanted to invite Yue Yang and Yi Nan, he had to show the clown some face. Afterall, the clown was the mastermind of this plan. To abandon this alliance was not something he, as a Radiant Knight who firmly abided by the knight's code of conduct, could bring himself to do.

“Sorry, Marshal Long Xiang, the order we received was to keep them here.” The other two Heaven Rankers, who also remained, shook their head in objection.

“What?” Long Xiang's face showed his anger, he felt that his pride was being challenged.

“I apologise, but our leader ordered to keep the two here. Marshal Long Xiang, we would stand by our leader's orders unless you kill us.” The two Heaven Rankers showed Long Xiang respect.

They did not want to make him angry, but the clown had long sent this death order. If they could not capture Yue Yang and Yi Nan alive, they would be killed.

“.....” Long Xiang looked at Yue Yang and Yi Nan and suddenly nodded gently: “Sorry, I cannot care about your matters. To ally with the Clown Group was Lionheart King’s orders. Long Xiang can not go against that. The only thing we can do, as an Aerial Knight Group, is to withdraw out of the battle between you two. Long Xiang hereby wish you all the best!”

The two Heaven Rankers were relieved at Long Xiang’s words.

If this guy, who was extremely inflexible, refused to stay out of matters, that would have been troublesome.

Fortunately, their leader, the clown, had already allied with Lionheart King. With the restriction of the contract of alliance, no matter how stubborn Long Xiang was, he would not go against his principles.

The two Heaven Rankers looked at each other.

Taking down these two strange youngsters with just one ranker seemed dangerous.

If both heaven-tier rankers attacked together, it would be easy.

No matter how powerful the two were, they could not be Heaven Ranked.

Heaven Rank was a realm.

Between two Heaven Rankers, there was a certain type of resonance. This could not be hidden. Since the two in front of them did not have such a resonance with them, this proved that they were not Heaven Ranked. A non Heaven Rank against a Heaven Rank? No matter how perverted their abilities were, even if they could transcend tiers in battle, they could not possibly win against them! No matter how powerful they were, an Earth Ranker could not defeat a Heaven Ranker – this was a record that no one in



Heaven Realm had ever been able to beat.

“Thank you.” Yue Yang raised Crescent Blade and nodded towards Long Xiang: “At first, when I was feeling extremely displeased, I wanted to kill everyone on this ship. But I will spare them, to give you face. If this entire ship were to sink, the displeasure in my heart would roughly be removed.”

“Don’t be foolish, this is Sky Region Emperor’s boat.” When he saw that Yue Yang was going to destroy the entire ship, he turned pale with fright and quickly stopped him.

“Who is the Sky Region Emperor?” Yue Yang had really never heard of this name before.

“.....” Long Xiang was stunned. He did not understand why Yue Yang had never heard of ‘Sky Region Emperor’. In South Heaven Realm, other than Boundary Master and three Great Leaders, beneath them was the Sky Region Emperor and the other hundred Region Emperors. Within the Hundred Region Emperors, Sky Region Emperor definitely ranked within the top 5. This was to say that regardless of whether through rank, ability, or fame, no matter how it was ranked, Sky Region Emperor was within the Top 10 in South Heaven Realm. To this young man who lived in South Heaven Realm and yet did not know who Sky Region Emperor was, Long Xiang could not help but smile bitterly: “Put it this way, my bounty is 400 million. The bounty of my master Lionheart King is 40 billion. And the bounty of Sky Region Emperor is 100 billion. This way, do you understand?”

“That is right.” The stone statue-like leader of the security who had helped Yue Yang before stood forward: “Although Starry Night is not one of the outstanding huge warships in Sky Region Emperor’s ninety five thousand fleet, but if you destroy this boat, it would be equivalent to challenging Sky Region Emperor. No matter which corner of Heaven Realm you escape to, the adjudication knights under Sky Region Emperor will follow you and kill you. Please do not be rash. It is easy to destroy a ship, but

the trouble you will attract is not what you and your lover can bear.”

“I completely understand.” Yue Yang turned to look at Yi Nan, and Yi Nan nodded her head firmly: “Yeah!”

“No, no, stop.....”

The two Heaven Ranker, leader of the security and all of the ship passengers cried out in surprise as Yue Yang raised Crescent Blade and unleashed the first form of the Armageddon Slash.

Earth Splitting Slash!

That blade tip that even Heaven Rankers feared cut through the entire Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship like it was tofu. It cut from the tip to the end, splitting the ship into 2 halves. A Sword Qi that was thousands of meters long completely blinded everyone. Even the clown, Skeleton man Rachel and Wise Demon Marshall who hurriedly looked towards the sky were completely stunned.

Female giant was also astonished. She thought she had guessed Yue Yang’s true ability, but did not expect herself to be completely wrong.

“Lunatic!” Long Xiang looked at Yue Yang with shock.

“Kill, kill him.....” the clown lost it, he almost instantly abandoned the female giant and shot into the sky, ready to kill Yue Yang with his own hands. He would definitely not let this young man grow. Behind him, female giant also abandoned the traitor Fu Tou who was cowering and chased after the clown. Her large fist sent a fatal blow to stop the clown from returning.

Before Skeleton Man Rachel and Wise Demon Marshall could react, Yue Yang had already raised Crescent Blade and slashed again in a way that could split heaven and earth.

Heaven and Earth Collapse!

His target was actually the clown.....

“What the, he is a lunatic!” Skeleton Man Rachel and Wise Demon Marshall could not help but scold loudly. They had met crazy people before, but they had never met an opponent as crazy as Yue Yang. For an Earth Rank Level 1 to attack a Peak Heaven Rank Level 4? Was there really anything more crazy than that in this world?

# Chapter 618 – What A Bully!

---

The clown's expression darkened when the sword came slashing down.

The two Heaven Rankers were planning to attack Yi Nan. However Yue Yang had already brought her into the Grimoire World moments before diving down to attack the clown. The two Heaven Rankers cursed secretly. They hated enemies who possessed Grimoires the most. This was because once they knew that they were no match they would flee to the Grimoire World. The two followed behind Yue Yang closely, and launched their attacks on Yue Yang together, taking advantage of the situation that Yue Yang was busy tackling the clown.

The situation appeared bleak for the clown as he was faced with both the slash by Yue Yang and attack from the back by the female giant.

At the back, the Skeleton Man Rachel and the Wise Demon Marshal also caught up as they attacked the female giant.

The cruise ship fell from the sky with its bow falling straight down. There were Thunder Griffins flying by the lake with passengers on them, and Soul Devouring Demon Sharks that would kill people. They leaped a great height out of water as they attacked their preys in the sky.

The entire battlefield was in chaos, and the situation had gone out of control.

“Puppet.” The clown with the [Puppet] Inherent Skill used his power calmly despite being attacked by both the female giant and Yue Yang. He summoned a Puppet that looked identical to him together with his Guardian Beast. His Guardian Beast was very special in the sense that it was a puppet whose level wasn't high and that it did not possess any life. But, it could amazingly help to withstand any form of injury sustained by its master. Hence, the

lethal attack by the female giant on the clown was completely absorbed by this useless puppet.

The puppet was crushed into nothingness while the clown, who had a narrow escape, remained unharmed and made use of it to rise into the sky.

The clown slid past Yue Yang eerily at the very moment the point of the blade was in front of him.

The tables had turned and the clown was at a higher position. With a deathly dark light shimmering off his finger, he pointed it to the back of Yue Yang's head quickly... The Finger of Death was a supreme technique learned by the clown when he was a disciple under a Region Emperor. Anyone struck would die, even for those who were Heaven Rank Level 1.

A millionth second after striking the back of Yue Yang's head, the clown realised that his body seemed to be bound by something.

At that very moment, Yue Yang charged forth, smiling as he rotated his body. With an even more violent motion, the Tao Tie Blade moved through the clown's abnormally long fingers and went directly for his face.

The third slash, Lord of Rivers and Mountains!

Dense sword light invaded the clown's Holy-ranked half crying and half smiling silver mask. It broke through and struck the clown's face, slightly penetrating his skull.

The clown was in so much agony that he lost control. He threw a kick angrily, which landed on Yue Yang.

Yue Yang's body turned like a spinning top after his kick... This was one of the clown's killer move. He would first prevent his enemy from attacking and defending and keep him under the spinning motion. This was so that he could then control his enemy.

"Die!" The clown covered his face in defense with one hand and

pointed at the top with another.

He struck the Finger of Death again.

What weirded him out was that the binding power appeared again, and the clown could only watch as Yue Yang struck under the spinning motion. The slash went through the clown's finger the second time as it went past his silver mask and struck his face. That was the fourth slash, Universal Reversal! This wasn't only Yue Yang's most powerful slash, it was also accompanied with the clown's spinning motion. The clown spun as he was struck, making it impossible to retaliate.

Just as the two were fighting, the female giant arrived.

She reached out her hand and lifted the clown as if he was a tiny chick.

She held him in her hands.

She then unleashed her power and wrung the clown, causing his bones to creak. She smashed the clown onto her knee forcefully. Finally, the groaning clown was thrown far away as a weapon, towards the Skeleton Man Rachel and the Wise Demon Marshal.

Yue Yang stepped onto the nape of the female giant. Using the momentum, he waved his Crescent Moon and resisted the attack from the two Heaven Rankers.

Even before the duo could unleash all their power, Yue Yang had disappeared into thin air.

In the next second, he had already moved past the Skeleton Man Rachel and the Wise Demon Marshal and went straight for the clown who was falling into the lake... The female giant unleashed her strength as the image of an ancient dragon formed above her head. The two Heaven Rankers were shook away from the impact, and kept puking blood. She let out a roared in rage as she gathered her energy on her fists in a furious attempt to block Skeleton Man Rachel and Wise Demon Marshal.

The duo defended without retreating as they gritted their teeth and resisted the attack of the female giant.

If not for the Dragon Plague that depleted her power, they wouldn't have been able to take such a blow from her.

Yue Yang chased after the clown on the surface of the lake. The clown who hated Yue Yang to the core also tried to turn the tables as he waved his magic wand and fought against Yue Yang.

The honor of being Heaven Ranked was nothing to the clown.

He wouldn't mind being even more shameless if he could kill Yue Yang!

They were only half a meter apart from each other, but the shrewd clown could still release three lethal strikes skillfully. The Three-coloured Balls he hurled collided with each other, and hit three vital parts of Yue Yang's body. The clown pointed his magic wand between Yue Yang's eyebrows. Its power was preceded only by the Finger of Death. One would either be dead or paralysed by it. What was even faster than this was the clown's feet. As if dancing rapidly, he had already kicked Yue Yang ten times even before the magic wand had hit Yue Yang.

There wasn't any remedy to the clown's kicks.

Even his master, Qing Yi, who was a Region Emperor held the clown in high regards. He felt that the clown's kicks had already reached its peak in terms of speed.

The clown had planned to use his kicks to break Yue Yang into pieces. The magic wand and three-coloured balls were just feints.

Only his swift kick was his masterstroke in killing his opponents.

But then the clown felt a pain in his abdomen. To his dismay, he realised that he had been similarly kicked in the abdomen.

The speed and frequency of the kick on his body were actually on par to his own swift kicks... How could this happen? The clown

couldn't fathom why, he only felt a terrifying energy invading him, and it felt as if the energy was going to burst out from his stomach. The clown could only leap into the air and forgo the opportunity to continue his attack as he fled from Yue Yang's advances.

Seeing that the tables had turned, Yue Yang chased after the clown closely.

The fifth slash went down powerfully.

The clown was driven to the edge of madness. How could he, as a Heaven Ranker, be beaten up to this state? Furious, he used the three-coloured balls and magic wand in his retaliation. If Yue Yang were to continue pursuing him, Yue Yang would definitely get struck. The clown did not think that Yue Yang would continue...

Even if Yue Yang were to push on, he would not be able win against Heaven Rankers!

The clown realised how wrong he was in the next second.

Not only did Yue Yang continue the chase, he did so without any defense, just like a suicidal maniac!

The glittery silver magic wand was slashed into half. Yue Yang ignored the three-coloured balls shot towards him completely, even as they were shot into his body and large amount of blood splattered out. He continued to concentrate on using his utmost strength to coagulate the most powerful sword light ever gathered by him yet. It would be powerful enough to split heaven and earth apart.

The fifth slash, Slaughter of Gods and Demons!

The entire sky split into two from the impact of this slash.

The water in the huge lake also sank, forming a crack several meters wide until the bottom of the lake.

That was the first time fear ever flashed across the clown's eyes



behind his silver mask. He threw away his beloved magic wand for the first time. His long fingers rotated around agilely as he tried to break Yue Yang's blade. Just before the Tao Tie Blade reached his silver mask, the clown gritted his teeth and took the blow directly.

“That was close!”

Even before he could take a breather, the clown made a habitual kick.

The shadow casted by the falling Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship made him recall something important.

His whole body shook... Oh no, it's a trap!

But his realisation came too late. The binding energy appeared for the third time and was a hundred times stronger than before. The clown wasn't able to struggle nor could he defend himself for at least a second. It was as if his soul had left his body. He couldn't use his life saving Puppet Inherent Skill, his Guardian Beast couldn't help to die in place of him, and his enemy still held back his trump card. The clown was scared witless as he saw Yue Yang let go of his Tao Tie Blade and instead used his hand to remove his holy ranked silver mask... All was lost, his face was exposed under the attack of his enemy... closely after, the clown saw a scary sword, one that he had never seen but could make even his soul shake.

It was a divine sword, one that could destroy all will. It was completely made up of energy. It was pitch black, dark, mysterious and deadly, like a death god's sword.

Gui Cang Sword!

Yue Yang lifted his finger, and in the clown's terrified eyes, the sword had been nailed deeply in between his eyebrows.

At the very moment the clown regained freedom, he summoned for his Guardian Beast immediately. But it was dispersed by Xiao Wen Li using white light when it appeared. Hence, it couldn't help

to take the injuries sustained by the clown. The clown's pitiful groans was a thousand times louder than the previous aerial knight. The entire place was filled with his tragic blood-curdling scream.

Just as everyone was on the verge of going deaf, they went temporarily lost their hearing.

Those of lower levels, such as crews and passengers of Earth Rank Level 3 and below all went unconsciousness.

Even the Thunder Griffins soaring in the sky also fell towards the ground as if they lost gravity. They were deeply affected by the clown's mournful scream... The clown did not dare to retaliate now. After pulling out the Gui Cang Sword from himself, he used his greatest speed to run away.

“Weren't you so arrogant previously? I am gonna beat you up!” Although Yue Yang was also severely injured, he was on the winning end, hence his morale was boosted.

He waved his Tao Tie Blade and continued to chase the clown.

Yue Yang gained his supersonic speed after his battle with the Scarlet Emperor.

He utilised it greatly in his battle with the clown.

For a ranker like the clown who was super fast, agile, flexible and skillful, Yue Yang believed that even the female giant wouldn't be able to defeat him. But for Yue Yang who shared similar traits, he could be considered a nemesis of the clown. Moreover, he possessed the high level Innate Invisible Sword Qi, Gui Cang Sword, together under with the aid of his capable Xiao Wen Li, it was almost certain that the clown would be on the losing end. However, what surprised Yue Yang the most when that the clown could still run with such a speed even after getting struck by the Gui Cang Sword.

The clown was too fast. As Yue Yang had more moves he wanted

to use on the clown but he missed the opportunity to, he could only chase after the clown.

The female giant, Skeleton man Rachel, Wise Demon Marshal, Long Xiang and two other Heaven Rankers all paused as they watched in shock towards the scene of Yue Yang chasing after the clown.

What happened exactly?

Could they be seeing things wrongly? Shouldn't it be the other way round, with the clown chasing after the abnormal boy instead?

"I'll beat you to a pulp, I'll kick you to death, I'll chop you into pieces, fuck, why are you running!" Yue Yang sped up a little, but as it was the clown who was running away, he became more passive. Hence, the two's battle became one where victory couldn't be decided. The clown ran wildly around and around the surface of the lake, sliding past the boundary of death. He was wary because if he were to touch the water, he might just fall into the lake and get stuck in the boundary of death. He would then become a target of Yue Yang's slaughter... He moved past the surface of the lake swiftly. Two columns of water spurted into the sky in the area he moved past.

Yue Yang pursued closely above the clown, swinging his Tao Tie Blade wildly at the clown. It forced the clown to keep moving forward without opportunity for a retaliation.

Yue Yang's storm-like strikes caused thousands of water pillars to spurt out from the surface of the lake.

The Soul Devouring Demon Sharks that were previously nefarious also fled in shock.

Those who were struck had their body parts separated.

The clown wished that he had eight legs to aid in his escape... His Puppet Inherent Skill, his masterstroke, and his Puppet Guardian

Beast were rendered useless and were instantly dispersed and killed when their nemesis, loli lamia, was summoned.

Without his lifesaving Inherent Skill, the clown did not dare to take any blows at all.

He might lose his life if he were to be struck again.

Hence he tried to run away using his greatest speed. He ignored Yue Yang's kicks and slashes from behind. This depressing battle, where he couldn't even retaliate, drove the clown to the verge of tears.

What a bully! Where did this abnormal boy come from?

The clown had never seen such a sicko in his entire life. Not only was he of lower rank, he even persisted in attacking the clown. Couldn't he give him a breather?

# Chapter 619 – Glowering, Looking At Each Other Helplessly

---

“Boom...”

Despite the whole crew's best efforts to rescue the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship, the ship in the sky was unable to be saved in the end.

It broke in half in the skies high above.

The boat tilted, dangling like a sharp sword.

Eventually, it landed one after another straight into the center of the man-eating lake.

The wind barrier that was originally barely maintained collapsed completely the moment the ship's wreckage passed the boundary of death. Without the protection provided by the wind barrier, the countless fragments and various equipments on board were tossed everywhere into the air. The deck that broke the water surface let out a terrifying creak and broke and exploded into pieces from the impact of the fall, causing waves. Lake water gushed onto the hold of the ship, letting out a startling boom. The water splashes reached up to a kilometer in height. The entire lake was as if an ancient giant monster, swallowing the cruise ship's wreckage greedily... The passengers had long escaped far far away while the crew members only reluctantly escaped from the ship at the last minute, gazing at the slowly sinking Starry Sky Liner.

The clown made use of the situation and ran into the ship with lightning speed, in an attempt to escape from Yue Yang's attack.

The cunning clown took advantage of the coverage provided by the ship's shadows.

“Come quickly!” the clown shrieked into the sky. The clown entered from the center of the ship's body and then exited again from the other side. He won a breath of time from the instant

where Yue Yang did not have enough time to continue pursuit.

The clown's shout only then roused Skeleton Man Rachel and the Wise Demon Marshal from their shock.

Skeleton Man Rachel and the Wise Demon Marshal immediately abandoned the female giant and flew down to aid the clown. Long Xiang then sighed silently and attacked female giant against his own wishes, stalling this strong enemy. Today's fight was the one that Long Xiang hoped to never happen, but he was unable to reject it as the clown was his ally at the moment.

As a righteous Royal Knight, Long Xiang could not defy his master's orders, and could not desert his allies.

Even if it meant to go against his own principles!

Fu Tou, who pretended to be heavily wounded, whispered secretly with the two other Heaven Rankers, they seemed to be discussing a countermeasure.

"So you were actually a Heaven Ranker disguised as a commoner, you little rascal." Wise Demon Marshal thought that Yue Yang could not be just a commoner. He must have used some special powers to disguise his original Heaven Ranker identity to an Earth Ranker. If that was not the case, then everyone would not have been duped, and the clown would not have landed himself in such a pathetic mess. Towards Yue Yang, Wise Demon Marshal did not hold back at all once he started attacking. Golden lights shimmered in his hands, and countless silk-like energy thread spread out, twisting towards Yue Yang as if a living organism. That was Wise Demon Marshal's [Twisting Silk Inherent Skill]. It was similar to Xiao Wen Li's Binding Inherent Skill but different.

This Twisting Silk Inherent Skill was only limited to trapping the enemy's body or weapons.

The effect was remarkable in a close-range fight.

It had no effect on the enemy's mind and soul, unable to truly

control the enemy but only bind and trap the physical body with strong silk thread.... If the enemy's rank was lower than the Wise Demon Marshal's, then this Twisting Silk Inherent Skill was very deadly. If the enemy was stronger than the Wise Demon Marshal, then it would serve as a distraction to create an opening for him to exploit.

Yue Yang could tell the characteristic of this Twisting Silk Inherent Skill with one look. He then kicked the clown mercilessly and used the momentum to fly back and away.

Skeleton Man Rachel behind, brandished Heartrend and slashed down ferociously at Yue Yang just as he avoided the twisting silk. A perfect slash! This attack imitated Yue Yang's perfect slash, and a rather good imitation that was at least eighty percent similar.

"You must be tired of living!" Yue Yang did not took the blow head-on but instead used Xiao Wen Li's Binding Inherent Skill. In the instance that it 'froze' in place, Yue Yang pierced Rachel's upper and lower palate with Tao Tie Blade, directly attacking towards the soul flame protected by the two rows of teeth. Rachel was shocked, but fortunately for him, the Binding Inherent Skill was just a mere fraction of a second. It immediately reactd and gave up on its attack. It hurriedly clamped Yue Yang's Tao Tie blade between its two rows of teeth while warding off the Tao Tie Blade brandished by Yue Yang.

The two rows of teeth were usually loose but in a fight, it was exceptionally strong.

Yue Yang burst with great power, and kept on poking and stabbing.

Yet, he was unable to thrust in at all.

On the contrary, Skeleton Man Rachel was sacred to its bones. It had never thought that its weakness would be seen through by its enemy in a single moment, and that the enemy would immediately aim for its fire of soul.

It kept on stepping back in an attempt to dispel the force of Yue Yang's stab.

Meanwhile, Wise Demon Marshal at the back was unwilling to stop his relentless pursuit. He waved his countless twisting silk, wanting to catch and trap Yue Yang.

Yet, Skeleton Man Rachel's retreating speed was extremely fast, such that Wise Demon Marshal could not actually catch up. Wise Demon Marshal was cursing in his head, calling Rachel a coward. If only it would stop, even if only just for a second, the Twisting Silk Inherent Skill could firmly trap the enemy. He was shouting while chasing "More to the left, do an arc motion in our direction. No, more to the left..."

Skeleton Man Rachel was cursing just the same. If it was to listen to him, he would then really be courting death!

Why not you try to let someone stab your mouth with a knife?

Arc motion?

Bullshit!

It was a pity that it could not curse that out, if not it would had made sure to cover Wise Demon Marshal in a torrent of curses.

The battle situation now became comical again. Skeleton Man Rachel was having a small blade fight with Yue Yang while at the same time retreating, while Yue Yang's Tao Tie Blade was impaled in its mouth. At the back, there was Wise Demon Marshal who was even more powerful, but due to a lack of speed, could only watch hopelessly, not helping the situation at all. Rachel did not dared to risk taking Yue Yang's soul-piercing blow head-on and therefore maintained the deadlock situation.

There were three shadows in the sky, descending like a big bird.

They were Fu Tou and the two Heaven Rankers from before. The three of them calculated the timing and intercepted halfway.



What was even faster than them was the female giant, who had already beaten up Long Xiang because he did not attack with his full strength. Long Xiang was beaten till his armor shattered, and then retreated pathetically. The female giant arrived in time like a war goddess. She reached out her gigantic arms and with only one arm, took on the attacks of three Heaven Rankers head-on. The other arm, scrunched into a fist, banged right-on onto Skeleton Man Rachel's head ruthlessly, almost killing Rachel immediately, its soul flame was almost extinguished... Countless twisting silk, as if living organisms bound the female giant's body... the female giant let out a roar, and struck Wise Demon Marshal with a punch. With just a wave from both of her arms, the solidified silk threads were almost completely shaken apart.

The clown who managed to catch a breath then finally arrived.

He blocked Yue Yang, who used the God Killing Dagger to help the female giant sever the silk threads. A flurry of kicks and hundreds of kicks were sent in just a second.

Yue Yang did not moved an inch, standing in defense right behind the female giant.

Rachel was still clamping on the Tao Tie Blade by his mouth, affecting Yue Yang's moves to a small extent. However, even though that was the case, "leg-fighting" with the clown was of the same difficulty, equally matched. On the other hand, he was using Crescent Blade to fight with Rachel's Heartrend. Golden Armor Marshall Long Xiang was a bit hesitant; it was below his prideful and honourable heart to attack his enemies in their vulnerable situation.

That was unless his allies were in danger.

So, he decided to just observed for the moment.

Wise Demon Marshal on the other hand did not have such a worry at all. With powerful swirl of his arms, those silk threads severed by Yue Yang miraculously "revived" and rapidly formed a

python-like giant silk rope, which twisted crookedly around female giant's body.

“Go, leave this to me!” Female giant hollered towards the sky, her muscles flexed even more powerfully, bracing the giant silk rope squarely.

In that terrifying outburst, both Yue Yang and the clown were blown away by the the shock waves from the female giant's outburst, since they were both not able to react in time. The giant silk rope that Wise Demon Marshal confidently believed that even the Ancient Titans could not break free from actually broke into pieces. The shock waves caused Wise Demon Marshal who was using his skill full out to bleed from his mouth and brought excruciating pain to the joints of his fingers as if they were broken.

Rachel who just released its clamp on Tao Tie Blade and ready to deliver an unexpected slash to female giant screamed in horror upon seeing how she freed herself from the giant silk rope.

He turned around and fled immediately.

That was absolutely terrifying. Who would be able to rival such brute force?

Just as Skeleton Man Rachel scooted and escaped, it suddenly saw Yue Yang shamelessly delivering back a flying kick. Rachel then found himself jolted back to female giant's side again.

“Running away? I'll let you run to your heart's content!” Female giant caught Skeleton Man Rachel and pressed down on his skull, she then captured Wise Demon Marshal who was trying to escape on the other side. This was a special ability that Ancient Dragons were born with, the Dragon Claw. Wise Demon Marshal knew the situation turned bad when he saw the image of the Ancient Dragon appear in the sky, and a giant golden claw came towards him from the empty sky. He hurriedly wrapped himself up with silk threads like a silkworm, protecting his body.

However, it was too late!

His bald head was caught by the female giant. She now had a head in each hand, with Skeleton Man's head on the other side.

The female giant then mercilessly banged the two heads together while shouting with a thundering rage...

In that earth-shattering impact, the shock waves caused raging waves of tens of meters to rise from the lake's surface. The stream of air that exploded engulfed the entire battlefield.

Wise Demon Marshal was bleeding from his eyes, ears, nose and mouth, and was in a state of dizziness with his eyes rolled back. He fell head first towards the lake, unable to even maintain his body's suspension in mid-air; as compared to him, Skeleton Man Rachel was even worse, its teeth was knocked out of its mouth all over the floor, and it was highly unlikely to find them again. The sturdy skull that was almost impenetrable also suffered numerous cracks, the soul flame inside dimmed and dark.

The clown saw that the situation was bad, immediately ran away from the battlefield.

He could tell that the female giant was overdrafting her life, using her life to strengthen her battle power. She was, at that moment, without doubt invincible. If he was to end up in her hands, he believed that he would not be able to even save a single bone of his.

On the contrary, Long Xiang attacked Yue Yang at that moment, preventing him from killing Fu Tou and the other two Heaven Rankers.

"You're too slow!" Yue Yang slid out from Long Xiang's net of blades like a swimming fish. Even though Long Xiang's sword managed hundreds of hits in one blow, it was all superficial injuries, nothing critical. Yue Yang flashed past Long Xiang's side. Long Xiang staggered, because a deep punch mark appeared on his

chest was. The punch broke the golden armor's defense, strangely breaking the body-protecting energy, and penetrated directly to his internal organs, making him suffer.

Long Xiang realized in shock, could it be that even he was no match to him?

As a confident Royal Knight, it was Long Xiang's first time in life to doubt his own abilities... He realized something, the opponent's speed was really too fast. Even though it looked like a single punch on the surface, in reality, it must be a layering of at least a thousand punches, if not it was impossible to create such an effect.

Compared to the opponent's layering of a thousand punches, he only made five hundred and eighty eight stabs with only three hundred and two hitting the target.

What if the opponent did not deliver that punch but escaped and not fight?

Would he be able to hit him at all?

Long Xiang could not help but break out in cold sweat from the shock of this thought.

"I will kill you all." Yue Yang readied his stance, prepared to execute an earth shattering heavy blow. Fu Tou, the traitor and the other two Heaven Rankers were scared witless at this point in time, and hurriedly flee.

However, Yue Yang did not attack. Instead, he threw out his God Binding Chain and used it to wrap around female giant, who was still strengthening her powers and prepared to used her life and fight to death. The attacking blade tip transformed into a air stream that split space. In a flash, the lake waves rose to thousands of meters in height. Yue Yang and the female giant entered through the waves, it seemed like they entered a crack in space, disappearing in a blink of an eye.

Only then the clown understood; Yue Yang had never intended to

go all out, but only thought of escaping. The clown was immediately filled with regrets...

By the time he rushed back, where could he still find traces of Yue Yang and the female giant?

Wise Demon Marshal, who only came around after falling on the water surface, covered his head and groaned in pain: "Forget it, stop chasing. Raging Flame had been struck by the Dragon Plague anyway, she will die for sure. If we were to go after her, we will only sacrifice another person in vain."

"That is right. The appearance of that fellow was an accident. Fortunately our plan to kill Raging Flame succeeded." Skeleton Man Rachel, who only had a few pieces of broken teeth left in its mouth, also miserably counted the few pieces of broken teeth it just picked back. Even though it could still continue fighting, its morale was heavily damaged with the heavy bang of its head by the female giant, unable to raise any intention to fight again.

"..." The clown was puffing in anger. He felt that Yue Yang and the female giant must have not escaped far, but all his allies no longer had the intention to fight again, and if he was alone, he would be unable to do anything to his enemies. He was seething in anger yet unable to do anything. He clenched his long fingers tightly in a fist and breathed in deeply. After regaining his cool, he slowly said: "That was not teleportation, what that fellow executed was just a false image. From my judgement, that fellow and Raging Flame must be still in the vicinity, they might just be hiding at the bottom of the lake. I suggest that we stay here for the moment and take our time to search. As for the losses, I will take full responsibility... In conclusion, just a sentence, I will never give up till I see Raging Flame's body."

"If the search is only confined to the vicinity, then we will just stay a while more!" Skeleton Man Rachel and Wise Demon Marshal decided to stay after exchanging their opinions.

Long Xiang decided to stay too.

However, the Thunder Griffin Army had to escort the passengers and crew who were too traumatised to leave.

Led by more than ten Silver Armor Generals, the majestic procession went further and further. Everyone more or less suffered from the shock wave, regardless if it was the passengers, the crew members or even the security guards of the cruise, and some people even unfortunately died. But overall it was still not bad, the majority of the people were saved by the Thunder Griffin Army.

Amongst the crowd were one-eyed dragon who changed his attire rapidly and skinny mercenary and crew who all managed to sneak into the passengers crowd.

They looked back sorrowfully, watching the lake.

While leaving with the team...

Countless members of the Black Skeleton Bandit Group and the Clown Bandit Group were patrolling the surface of the lake.

According to the clown's deduction, Yue Yang's last blow definitely did not split open space but instead cleverly opened the lake's surface boundary of death, which he then escaped down to with the female giant, hiding somewhere at the bottom of the lake.

That was really the case in reality.

At the pitch black bottom of the lake, Yue Yang and female giant were looking angrily at each other.

Staring at each other helplessly!

Both of them had the ability to see in the dark. The pitch black of the bottom of the lake was nothing to the both of them.

The reason behind Yue Yang's and female giant's angry glares was very simple; The female giant did not approved Yue Yang's actions, she thinks herself as the boss, and that Yue Yang had to

listen to her, and even if he did not listened, he should not have stopped her from fighting. Meanwhile Yue Yang felt that female giant was an inflexible person, and that a stupid person should listen to the smart person, therefore she should listened to him, a boss or a group leader was nothing.

“I already have the Dragon Plague, and cannot live for long. Can I not even have a good fight before I die?” Female giant glared at Yue Yang.

“Use your abandoned brain to think, would I save a dying person? Forget it, you better not think about it, the only thing you have to do is to listen to my commands, if I command you to go east, you cannot go west. If I ask you to stand tall, you cannot sit on the ground, understand?” Yue Yang glared at the female giant, with the thought that female giant had very good fighting skills but she was just too inflexible, and that if she was to listen well to his commands, she could still be a free qualified fighter. As for gender, we could just forget about it, she was not a woman at all but a barbarian!

Since she was a barbarian with brains formed from muscles, why bother with gender?

There was no need!

Therefore, Yue Yang ignored the female giant's gender...

# Chapter 620 – Hidden Beneath, Curing the Dragon Plague

---

The female giant couldn't win the staring contest against Yue Yang. She never met anyone who wasn't afraid of her glare.

Normally, the moment she sharpened her eyes, everyone immediately withdraw with their tails between their legs.

But Yue Yang was different. Yue Yang had already been trained under the killer eyes of the tigress, Princess Qian Qian, and he had already attained the realm of "Unmoved by Hundred Glares". Xue Wu Xia used to tease him and said that his skin was so thick that he could probably survive Ah Man's Doom Eyes and Blood Eye Double Kill. Although she was a little exaggerating, Yue Yang's resolution was indeed different than ordinary people. Forget about going through countless life and death battles, even when he just transferred here, his guts were bigger than most people. Hence, towards that kind of frown and glare, it had no effect on him!

Yue Yang wasn't scared of anything. The only ones who could keep check on him were Fourth Mother and Zhi Zun.

"Meeting you is my bad luck. Get away from me, I'm digging a grave." the female giant was feeling very gloomy right now. Not only was she unsuccessful in glaring this brat away, she was also unable to go outside and fight. This was because her body was bound by God Binding Chains. If she forced her way out, she might even implicate this brat and cause him to die with her.

She felt that she should die brilliantly in the midst of explosions.

However, with Yue Yang causing problems here, she wasn't able to do it even if she wanted to.

Hence, she could only gloomily dig a deep hole at the bottom of the lake to serve as her grave after she died. The Dragon Plague on her body wouldn't kill her instantly, it would kill her slowly and



painfully over a few months, or even years. She would definitely not become a bed-ridden patient and wait for her death. She had decided to commit suicide and die in this lake.

Although dying at the bottom of the lake was not as brilliant as dying on the battlefield, it was better than dying on a bed.

As a Heaven Ranker, she had her own pride!

A Heaven Ranker could easily dig a grave effortlessly.

After the female giant dug the hole, she laid inside it to test it out and realised that it fits her body perfectly. She was about to kill herself when she realised that Yue Yang had also laid right beside her. She was immediately at a loss. Was this brat also thinking of committing suicide, accompanying her to die? That was not possible. He still had that little wife of his, why would he commit suicide?

Yue Yang had not only lied down in the grave, he even used the God Binding Chain and pulled a big piece of rock, placing it on top of the grave.

Towards his actions, the female giant was almost driven insane.

What was this brat thinking?

“Shh!” Yue Yang comfortably lied on the grave, and shushed the female giant who was completely frustrated.

“?” The female giant didn’t understand. However, in an instant, she suddenly felt that there was a strange tremble from the bottom of the lake. It was like an earthquake, but the trembling become stronger and stronger. It was as if something was trying to break away, bursting out from the ground. In an instant, the female giant understood. It was an Ancient entity who had been sleeping at the bottom of the lake for a long time, but was awakened due to the fall of the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship. That entity, who had been awakened, was trying to drill out from the underground.

This was most likely done by this brat!

The reason why he cut the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship into half, first was to deceive the clown. He made the clown thought that his strength was his blade techniques. In reality, his killing skill was Sword Qi. The second reason was to break the Boundary of Death. He made the wreckage of the cruise ship shake the bottom of the lake and awaken the sleeping Ancient being.

On the lake surface, their enemies were definitely still looking for them.

When the ancient being awakens, it would definitely attack those enemies... It was all this brat's plan!

No wonder he didn't stop her from digging a grave and thick-skinnedly lied down beside her.

Turns out that he wanted to use the ancient being to kill his enemies!

She could imagine, when the ancient being attacks the clown, she would appear right at the moment when the clown was in trouble. The enemy would definitely lose miserably that way.

"Humph!" The female giant glared at Yue Yang again. Although she looked like she still couldn't accept it on the surface, she still respected him in her heart. He had thought so far in the battle right from the beginning and planned out every single detail. He definitely had a brilliant brain. She quickly hid her presence, trying her best not to attract the ancient being's attention. She also tried to quietly sense the surrounding, trying to guess what kind of ancient being was it. How did it cause such a strong earthquake when awakened?

"Ten minutes." Yue Yang gestured to wait.

"I can't wait anymore, we'll die in 10 minutes." The female giant had also wanted to say that if she wanted to show off her battle prowess, she had to do it before the Dragon Plague affected her whole body.

“Don’t be noisy.” Yue Yang didn’t care about her opinion at all. This made her so angry that her lungs almost exploded. She really wanted to choke this brat to death.

Yue Yang suddenly reached out to the female giant’s abdomen.

The female giant froze.

When she managed to come back to her senses, she realised that he was trying to detoxify the Dragon Plague in her body.

She felt extremely moved, yet sad at the same time.

To normal people, Dragon Plague wasn’t poisonous. However, if a Giant Dragon was afflicted with the illness, the stronger, the older, and the purer the Giant Dragon was, the more damage it would suffer from the Dragon Plague. It was said that the Dragon Plague was originally a god’s curse that had gone through million years of evolution to turn into a plague.

If she wasn’t battling by burning her life’s essence, she might recover from the Dragon Plague after nursing it for a few years.

However, in the previous battle, she was too angry, so she didn’t hesitate to use her life force to increase her strength. Hence, the Dragon Plague’s poison had reached her inner organs. She was already incurable.

“I am incurable, you don’t have to waste your energy curing me. I will go and kill some other bastards again later, then my life would not be wasted.” The female giant felt a special kind of energy from Yue Yang’s hands that had the ability to dilute the potency of the Dragon Plague. However, as the Dragon Plague had reached her inner organs, it was like pouring a cup of water into a burning cart of firewood.

“Shut up.” Yue Yang dismissed her easily and asked her to shut up so that he could concentrate, causing the female giant to be so frustrated that she wanted to choke him to death and whip him for three days three nights.

The female giant was actually not a fool.

On the contrary, she was extremely clever.

It was just that she was used to do things in her high-moraled way, which made her seem too inflexible and conservative to others.

There were many weaknesses and strengths in her personality. If she made a friend, as someone who had such high morals, she would undoubtedly be the most loyal friend and would never betray her friends. If she was hired for a job, then she would be the best since she would definitely be able to wonderfully complete her tasks, or even exceeded the requirement. She wouldn't have any selfish motives. However, if she were to become a leader, it would be the end. She would never be able to impose her ideals and high morales on her subordinates.

Even if she managed to do it, she would be forcing her subordinates to comply. It wouldn't be up to their own sincerity.

Yue Yang had already known from the beginning that the whole Raging Flames Bandit Group was held together by her alone.

Without her, they would be nothing!

Other than one-eyed dragon, the skinny mercenary and a few dozens mercenaries, the Ox-clan brothers and the dead Deer Hunter, the rest of the members were just paying lip service, appearing to obey her on the surface but doing something else behind her back.

Especially in the test of life and death, those members actually abandoned the fight just because their loved-ones were held hostage.

Just based on this, it was obvious that she was no leader material! From what Yue Yang could tell, she could not even be a general that led the troops, let alone a commander that planned battle strategies, the most she could be was a front line soldier.

Therefore, Yue Yang did not help at all as he watched the Raging Flames Bandits disband since there was no point in keeping a group like that. Doing it would only be a waste of time. However, he felt that the female giant Raging Flame must be saved. She was a skilled fighter and if she was willing to obey commands, then she would definitely be a great killing machine.

Yue Yang did not expect himself to tame her, hence he decided to be the bad guy instead.

It was okay if she did not listen to him.

If he handed her over to Xue Wu Xia or Princess Qian Qian, they would definitely have a way to control her to do things... This was a human resource skill, Yue Yang had it all planned already.

If Yue Yang had helped the female giant during the Plague Dragon Nail incident, she would not have been tricked. However, it was Yue Yang's intention to use this incident to 'tell' her who were the traitors and what kind of things could not be handled well using morals.

It was not a problem of morals but the way she handled things.

The same tactic cannot be used to handle both good guys and bad guys.

“Boom...”

The bottom of the lake quaked. And finally, numerous humongous living beings with terrifying energy levels emerged from the broken lake bottom like a huge earthquake, and let out thundering noises.

The female giant was surprised and curious at the same time.

How did this fellow know that there were sleeping ancient entities below the bottom of the lake? He did not even know general knowledge such as the Sky Region Emperor, how could he know that there were sleeping ancient entities in the man-eating lake? Even she, who lived nearby, did not know of this secret.

What made her even more puzzled was that the place he brought her to was coincidentally an area far away from the ancient entities at the bottom of the lake, she was safe at where she was even with numerous ancient entities emerging out.

Could it be that he planned it?

“You rascal...” The female giant realised that he was an enigma, one that she could not figure out no matter how.

“Nine minutes left, there is not much time, can you cooperate? Do not resist the energy and relax your whole body!” Yue Yang calculated the time, and felt that they were a bit tight on time for healing, and yet the female giant was not cooperating, he was so angry he scolded her “Are you a pig, don’t you even know how to relax your whole body!”

The female giant raised her fist prepared to hit Yue Yang, but suddenly, a gigantic being swam over.

With a terrifying energy level, it must have been at least a Level Six Heaven Ranker.

She then hurriedly lowered her fist, held her breath and cooled down, cooperating with his curing.

She was definitely not convinced, but she was not stupid to have a confrontation with him, after all he was smarter. For the time being, she decided to listen to him, but just this time round!

Yue Yang was initially worried that she would resist, hence he did not release his full Innate Invisible Qi but just a thread. After she cooled down and opened her mind, he immediately increased his input of his Innate Invisible Qi. This energy transformed like a spring into a stream, then into a brook, and finally into a river, surrounding the Dragon Plague in her body, and pushed it together into a ball.

The female giant glanced at him in surprise. If she did not see for herself, she would not believe that his energy was actually this

pure and large.

An unceasing flow, as if a river.

“Ah!” What made the female giant experienced excruciating pain was not only the healing of the Dragon Plague but also the Nirvana Flame that Yue Yang channeled into her body. This kind of purification was a hundred times more painful than the world’s most painful injury. That was because the Nirvana Flame was a purification process from the outside to the inside, from the inside to the outside, from body to energy, and from energy to soul.

If one did not had the sufficient energy level or a pure soul, the Nirvana Flame could destroy a life directly, disintegrating it into nothingness, and returning it to its original state.

On the contrary, if one was able to successfully bathe under Nirvana Flames and be purified, one would be reborn anew, experiencing an evolution.

The female giant was in excruciating pain, but she endured it with all her might.

# Chapter 621 – An extremely wise decision

---

The lake and the shore shook.

At first, the clown thought the noise was created by female giant after burning the last bit of her life, causing an explosion that contained the power surpassing Heaven Rank Level 5. But, he quickly realised something was amiss. With only female giant, no matter how powerful she was, she would not have been able to make something like this happen. All of the Bandits, who were searching on the lake, flew away in terror.

The more timid ones escaped to four five hundred meters up in the air.

Even the leaders ranked above Earth Rank Level 5 flew two hundred meters up in the air and hid behind the Heaven Rankers.

The bald Wise Demon Marshal, Skeleton Man Rachel, Golden Armor Marshall Long Xiang and the brightly-dressed clown stared at the lake intently.

Five abnormally large whirlpools appeared on the surface of the lake. Countless Soul Devouring Demon Sharks and Man-eating Fishes started to flee in desperation. But their struggle was useless and they were all sucked into the whirlpool.

“It’s an Ancient Creature!” Wise Demon Marshal frowned, making the right judgment.

“The two halves of the cruise wreckage must have roused the dormant Ancient Creature in their deep slumber.” Long Xiang also found this explanation logical. The biggest issue now however, was how many Ancient Creatures were there in the entire man-eating lake? If there were as many as 5, that would really be a headache.

“After escaping to the bottom of the lake, could Raging Flame have gotten into a battle with the Ancient Creature? The energy in the lake is so chaotic that even whirlpools have formed. We should



retreat for now!” Skeleton Man Rachel felt that it was not wise to put themselves in danger now. Anyway, the Dragon Plague was enough to kill Raging Flame Leader. Even if she escaped to the bottom of the lake and was discovered by the Ancient Creature, to engage in battle would mean that both of them were heavily injured. It was just enough for them to simply reap those benefits.

“Everyone be careful.” Long Xiang felt that now the Ancient Creature had just woken up and was not aware of the situation, it might easily mistake the people above the lake surface as its enemy.

Two Heaven Rankers and the traitor Fu Tou looked at each other, and felt that it was not the time to be too close to the surface of the lake.

Although they were all Heaven Rankers, but they could not compare to Wise Demon Marshal and the clown. If they had to face the Ancient Creature, they would most likely lose. So they felt that the best thing to do was to escape to thousand meters up in the sky, to quietly observe the situation. If Raging Flame died in battle beneath the lake, they would not have to use even a single soldier to eliminate a powerful enemy. If Raging Flame escaped from the lake, they would outflank her in the air and attack.

Just when the three quietly left from behind the clown and rose into the sky, the whirlpools turned abnormal.

Huge waves shot into the sky.

Several shadows emerged from the water, like cheetahs that had been waiting in ambush to cull the prey before it. The shadows pounced to attack with such speed that even the clown and Long Xiang could only stare in shock. It was more agile than a cheetah, more crafty than a fox, more precise than a poisonous snake. In a flash, the three Heaven Rankers who had just left from behind clown, including Fu Tou, all three wound up coiled by the shadows..... the clown’s heart sank. If these shadows attacked the

four of them, they would still have been able to escape.

But the shadows did not attack the strongest four, and instead attacked the three Heaven Rankers who were slightly weaker than them.

Among the three Heaven Rankers, even the strongest Fu Tou was only Heaven Rank Level 2.

Previously, Fu Tou had self-mutilated himself multiple times to fake being seriously injured.

His ability was already weakened. At this point, he should only have the ability of a Peak Heaven Rank Level 1..... For three Level 1 Heaven Rankers, who in terms of reaction time and ability could not even compare to them, to be under such an attack was dangerous!

“Save them!” The clown screamed piercingly. He sped downwards, racing with the shadows, attempting to save his men.

The loss of even a single Heaven Ranker would greatly weaken the Clown Group’s strength.

The clown definitely did not wish for his Heaven Rankers to die under such random attacks.

Compared to the clown, Long Xiang had already raised his sword and upgraded his power in the first instant to land a heavy blow on the enemy. At this time, he could not be bothered to think about whether this would anger the enemy anymore. Saving their lives were of utmost importance.

On the other hand, Wise Demon Marshal’s face paled. He, who had acute senses, realised that the awakened Ancient Creature was Heaven Rank Level 6. Not only so, there appeared to be more than one Heaven Rank Level 6. If they did not escape, not to mention their companion, even they themselves would be in danger. However, before he could react, a giant shadow rose into the sky from the lake. It shot to the sky, covering everything under it. It

opened its mouth, and the entire sky became its gluttonous mouth.

“Ancient Demon Shark.....” The clown could only stare in shock. His eye twitched uncontrollably.

This was because he was looking at a shark, that was larger than even the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship, in the sky.

Its ability was as high as Heaven Rank Level 6. Up against this kind of Ancient Giant Beast with its superior size, even someone on the same level would not be a match.

What made the clown give up all hope was that when this Ancient Demon Shark soar into the sky, it lifted the Boundary of Death. The Boundary of Death was without a doubt a seal made by a Ranker from the ancient times. It was ineffective against small sized creatures, but for giant ancient creatures like the Ancient Demon Shark, it was almost impossible for them to escape. These giant ancient creatures were meant to only move within a specific area, like a small fish stuck within a big bubble.

Now that the Boundary of Death was lifted, all the members of Black Skeleton and Clown Group were trapped within in.

It was difficult to leave after entering the Boundary of Death!

Of course, the clown did not actually think that anyone could even escape from the enormous mouth of Ancient Demon Shark..... The three Heaven Rankers, including Fu Tou, gave out blood-curdling screams. The clown also sorrowfully realised that wrapped around their waist, was an octopus-like tentacle.

Those shadows were these tentacles.

As these tentacles could camouflage, it was impossible to notice anything amiss among the waves. Only when the waves shot out, and there was no need for camouflage that they had looked like shadows. Multiple extremely long tentacles wound around Fu Tou and the others and started dragging them madly. No matter how the three of them tried to attack, these extremely tough tentacles

were not the least bit affected and lazily dragged the trio towards the lake. Long Xiang attacked with his sword with all his power, but his slash only appeared as an obvious wound and could not cut through it.

“Fire wheel!” The clown swiped his hands and hurled multiple burning fire wheels at the tentacles.

Those fire wheels landed accurately on the wound Long Xiang made, as a sizzling sound appeared.

Burning flames made those tentacles retreat slightly. It threw Fu Tou and another Heaven Rankers away as if in pain. Multiple tentacles then all wrapped around the unlucky Heaven Ranker and dragged him down.

Wise Demon Marshal who had come forth to help, shot out countless threads of silk from his hands to form a giant silk cable which intercepted a few tentacles midway.

Skeleton Man Rachel shouted with slight fear.

The ‘Heartrend’ in its hands was swift as the wind.

In an instant, after slashing a hundred times at the wound Long Xiang made and that was burnt by the fire ring, they finally cut through one of the tentacles. The clown rushed down immediately, and reached out to pull the unlucky Heaven Ranker from the grasp of the tentacles. The forceful pulling made the unlucky Heaven Ranker scream in pain terribly. His entire body broke out in a mist of blood. His skin and muscles were forcefully torn apart from the suction pads, forming bloodied holes on his living body.

“It’s the Hundred Tentacle Cuttlefish King, quickly run!” Wise Demon Marshal shouted and rose to his highest ability, shaking away multiple tentacles that just shot out from the lake.

Long Xiang could not be bothered to save the members of Clown and Black Skeleton Group who were being swallowed by the

Ancient Demon Shark anymore. It was already extremely fortunate that they were able to save the three Heaven Rankers. An Ancient Demon Shark was already troublesome enough, now combined with the Cuttlefish King, who was definitely one of the water overlords, these two were unbeatable.

He pulled on one of the Heaven Ranker's hand, preparing to leave with him quickly.

Suddenly, a shadow that hid the skies and covered the earth appeared.

It was not the Ancient Demon Shark, but an Ancient Island Whale that was even bigger than it..... Although this Ancient Island Whale was only Heaven Rank Level 3, Long Xiang would still rather face 2 Ancient Demon Sharks than to face the Ancient Island Whale. The Ancient Island Whale itself was an existence that could not be confronted with human ability. Even though its attack power was low, its defence was completely impenetrable. This sort of giant body carried with it an inherent domain that could be compared to the Boundary of Death. With the insignificant power of a human, it could not be resisted. Ancient Demon Shark was bigger than the Luxurious Starry Sky Cruise Ship, while Cuttlefish King was also roughly the same size.

But those two compared to Ancient Island Whale, were simply a small fish and small prawn.

“Hello everyone, you all appear to be very busy. We hope that our appearance has not disturbed you all too much.” On the very edge of Ancient Island Whale's left fin stood a grinning young man. This man was Yue Yang. He greeted everyone politely like he was simply greeting old friends whom he had not met for a long time.

“Hng!” the female giant was standing right beside him.

She did not look too well. Her fists were clenched and she stared at Fu Tou with flames burning in her glare.

Fu Tou was going to lose his head from fear and could only think about escaping by first avoiding being engulfed by Ancient Demon Shark before escaping to the other side like a shooting star.

A black shadow shot towards the sky. It was extremely tall and long, shooting thousand of meters into the sky, but even that appeared to be less than a tenth of its body. It continued to rise. It was a Dragon Electric Eel. Among the Ancient Creatures, the Dragon Electric Eel ranked at least among the top 100 most ferocious creatures. Fu Tou banged against its body in a panic but the Dragon Electric Eel did not realise it at all. But, the electric domain surrounding its entire body, that was activated by touch, burnt Fu Tou to a black crisp in an instant.

Even though Fu Tou was not dead, he was barely alive. Now, even if a random kid were to punch him, he most likely would die.

Yue Yang threw out Binding God Chains from afar, catching Fu Tou who had fainted.

He leisurely pulled it back up, as if he was fishing, and dangled him under the Ancient Island Whale's fin.

“This damned Dragon God. Even after a hundred thousand years, this damned Boundary of Death could still confine me. Ahhhhhhhh..... I really hate seals the most. Curse all those who make seals.” A very skinny shadow was the last to float up from the lake surface. His appearance made the raging lake surface turn as still as a mirror in an instant. Even the giant waves that shot to the sky shrunk back mysteriously, as if afraid to go past his ankle. Compared to humans, this man had black skin and a thick beard. On the sides of this nose, positioned two meat whiskers that humans did not have.

The appearance of this man made everyone fall silent.

Even the Ancient Demon Shark that was swallowing the Clown Group and Dragon Electric Eel that was shooting up in the sky suspended in the air, as if regarding the man as their leader,

waiting for him to speak.

This man who seemed to be a mere Heaven Rank Level 1 suddenly knelt on the water surface. He clasped his hands together as if praying to someone and suddenly burst into tears: “Supreme Dragon God, is it not enough for me to admit that I made a mistake? A hundred thousand years have passed, you have punished me enough. Please send someone to release this damned Boundary of Death! I swear, I will not do bad things anymore..... I have truly repented, please release me from this Boundary of Death. A hundred thousand years have passed, the oceans of the past has become a lake. If you don’t release me now, this place is going to turn into mountains!”

After crying for a while, he saw that there was no reaction from the skies and quickly stood up. He pointed at the skies angrily, scolding: “Dragon God, if you don’t release me, I swear to be up to no good and do bad things everyday once I escape. I will definitely not forgive you!”

After cursing for quite a while, he then knelt on the floor: “Supreme Dragon God, I beg you, just treat me as a fart and release me!”

Making a pledge did not work, cursing also did not work.

Left with no solution, he pointed at the clown angrily: “No, I am very depressed today. I will not be able to stand it if I don’t kill some people. I really cannot hold myself back, please come over and let me just kill a two people. If I am still very depressed tomorrow, I will have to kill two more all the way until the Supreme Dragon God releases me. If not, you will all have to die!”

“.....” The clown and the others were speechless. Who did this black guy think he was? How could a mere Heaven Rank Level 1 be so arrogant. If he was a Level 5 Heaven Ranker like them, then would it not be that even the Region Emperors would have to bow to him?

“A very wise decision.” Yue Yang stretched out his thumb, praising the black bearded man: “King Jiaolong, I will support you!”



# Chapter 622 – Three hundred billion gold bounty Mo Long

---

“Who are you?” That black bearded man yawned as he glanced over Yue Yang. His demeanour was like a sleeping tiger who heard a buzzing mosquito.

“I am the one who came to release you...” When Yue Yang said this, Ancient Demon Shark, Ancient Island Whale, Dragon Electric Eel and Cuttlefish King that floated to the lake surface all looked at Yue Yang with anticipation. Actually, other than them, everyone present knew that this brat was lying. Forget about claiming that he knew the Supreme Dragon God that was at least hundreds of thousands of years old, he didn’t even recognise the current Sky Region Emperor. He was definitely just a country bumpkin who was pulling all these nonsense in an attempt to ally with the black bearded man.

“Humph.” the clown didn’t believe that the black bearded man would be fooled.

“Among the Supreme Dragon God’s subordinates, even the cleaners are at least Heaven Rank Level 5. You are just an Innate Level 7, no, an Innate Level 8 brat, how dare you pretend to be Supreme Dragon God’s messenger?” Obviously, the black bearded man didn’t believe Yue Yang. He immediately uncovered Yue Yang’s lie with a sentence, making the female giant Lie Yan feel especially embarrassed. However, the black bearded man still praised Yue Yang a little: “You dared to pretend to be Supreme Dragon God’s subordinate, so you must have some guts. Initially, I want to kill you first, but you are still okay to look at, although just barely. Alright, I’ll just kill you last!”

“Thank you.” Yue Yang continued to smile. The smile on his face was as bright as sunshine: “What if I said I’m Supreme Dragon God’s younger brother?”

The female giant covered her face with her hand and almost screamed out at Yue Yang to stop embarrassing her.

Supreme Dragon God was a Ranker from the ancient times. If he had a younger brother, at the very least he would be an old monster that was hundreds of thousands of years old. How could he be a snotty-nosed 20 year old brat? Even a blind person wouldn't be fooled. These lies were simply too unbelievable that even an idiot would not be convinced!

The clown almost couldn't hold in his laughter. If you wanted to pretend to be someone else, why didn't you pretend to be someone more believable?

Oddly, the black bearded man didn't refute Yue Yang straight away.

He slowly thought and then asked: "Can you tell me the reason why you are pretending to be Supreme Dragon God's brother?"

Yue Yang answered: "I thought it would be a little difficult to pass off as the Supreme Dragon God himself; and I can't pretend to be his disciple as I already have a master, it wouldn't be respectful to my master. I thought of pretending to be his son, but I feel that it would belittle my position. So I decided to pretend to be his younger brother. Who would have thought that you didn't believe me?"

Pfft!

The female giant couldn't stop herself from laughing.

Forget about trying to pass off as someone else, he even confessed directly to the other side. Was there anyone else who lied like him?

Long Xiang, the clown, Demon Marshal Zhi Guang and the others were speechless for quite a while. Was this brat clever? He was especially cunning and always plotting against the others. Was this brat an idiot? He was really so foolish that he could say whatever he was thinking. Even a fool wouldn't believe such a reason, right?

Was this brat actually clever or dumb? Why was he so different than the others?

The most surprising thing was that when the black bearded man heard this, he frowned and said: “Although you look like a normal human on the surface and not a Draconian, I just have this feeling that you are somehow related to the dragon clan. The dragon power in your blood is even purer than mine, who is a dragon. You said that you are the Supreme Dragon God’s brother, I’m really suspecting that...”

“Ah? You must be joking!” Everyone shouted in shock when they heard him.

“Hey, hey. I was just blabbering lies to you at a whim. It was just a joke. Don’t be too serious, or else it wouldn’t be fun that way!” Yue Yang quickly shook his hands.

“You may not be Supreme Dragon God’s brother, but you definitely have some relations with our dragon clan. The problem is that you are very weird. I can’t see through you, it is as if something is protecting you? Forget it, since it is like this, I shall make an exception and let you go. I have decided to become a good person recently. If you meet a draconian next time, tell them that I, Hei Jiao, have changed. Ask them to forgive me and help me ask for Supreme Dragon God’s mercy. If I continue to be locked up this way, I may get mental sickness soon!” The black bearded man wiped his tears sadly. However, everyone had already realised that this fellow was an expert in shedding crocodile tears. Although tears rolled down his face, there was no sense of regret at all.

“Okay, I’ll be going now then!” Yue Yang didn’t hesitate on the offer and started making his way out as he waved his hands goodbye.

“Wait...” That black bearded man suddenly called out to Yue Yang as if he was holding a thread of hope. He thought for a while and asked: “Can you really unseal this Boundary of Death? Wait,

nevermind... This is not something you can unseal. Go on ahead, the more I think about it the more depressed I will be.”

“I can’t unseal the Boundary of Death, but I can use a little technique to deceive the Boundary of Death and let you out.”

“Really?” The black bearded man suddenly dropped on the lake surface and rolled about, as if he was having a heart attack. When everyone was looking at each other in confusion, he jumped back up and appeared right in front of Yue Yang as if nothing had happened. He held Yue Yang’s hands tightly: “Then what are you waiting for? Quickly, let me out of here quickly. I can give you whatever you want, except for my virginity as a man. (Shiro: \_\_.) (Last: \_\_.) I have sworn to the heavens that only a beauty can take away my virginity, others can continue to dream on... Sorry, I digressed. Quickly, let me out. If you want anything, just tell me. Do you want mountains of gold, or do you want a harem of beautiful girls?”

“It’s like this... I have accidentally provoked an extremely powerful fellow, the Sky Region Emperor.” Yue Yang expressed that he himself was a fugitive, so he didn’t have the motivation to save others.

“Sky Region Emperor? I never heard of him!” The black bearded man shook his head.

“...” The clown and the others were speechless.

This was the second time they met someone who didn’t know Sky Region Emperor in one day.

However, according to the black bearded man, he had been locked away in this Man-eating Lake for hundreds of thousands of years. Maybe it was not very strange for him not to know the Sky Region Emperor. After all, the Sky Region Emperor wasn’t very famous hundreds of thousands of years ago. When this fellow was imprisoned, the Sky Region Emperor might not even been born yet.

Yue Yang already knew that the black bearded man would say that, so he smiled and said: “Actually it was just a misunderstanding. When I was fighting, I accidentally cut down his ship, which is actually the ship wreckage that had fallen into this lake. Without it, I wouldn’t be able to open the Boundary of Death, and I wouldn’t be able to release you all. Hence, I have accidentally done a bad thing out of good intentions. If you could just find some time to help me explain this to the Sky Region Emperor, I believe the misunderstanding will be solved.

The black bearded man smacked his chest, as if saying “Leave it to me!”.

Yue Yang first praised him for being true to his words, then smiled and pointed to the sky: “Actually, there is a witness above. Although I’m not very familiar, the one who is overlooking us from the sky should be his highness Lionheart King. With Lionheart King as witness, Sky Region Emperor’s misunderstanding with me would definitely be resolved!”

At this time, an invisible pressure suddenly appeared in the sky.

Even the Ancient Demon Shark and the Dragon Electric Eel which were floating in the sky dropped a few hundred metres down.

The members of the Clown and Black Skeleton Group, who had not been eaten, all fell rapidly. Those who were low levelled immediately fell into the lake. Only those above Earth Rank Level 5 barely managed to stay afloat the water surface. Even the clown, Long Xiang, Lei Qie and Demon Marshal Zhi Guang had to increase their power to resist the invisible force.

Although the female giant was a Heaven Ranker, she could still feel the pressure on her body.

She was worried that Yue Yang couldn’t withstand the pressure. However, she was shocked when she saw him. In that whole place, there were only two people who didn’t have any reaction to the

invisible force. Those two were the black bearded man and Yue Yang!

The black bearded man was an ancient being who didn't die after hundreds of thousands of years. If he was able to ignore the invisible pressure, that was understandable. However, Yue Yang was only 20 years old. To many of the Heaven Realm tribes, he was just a baby. How could he have no reaction at all?

Abnormal!

That was the only word that the female giant could use to describe him!

No other words, there were no other words more suitable to describe this brat... Even if he was from the human race, whose growth was extremely quick, she had never seen such an abnormal human being before!

“Are you the Lionheart King? You are quite the arrogant one!” The black bearded man picked his ears with his tails leisurely, almost as if he was bored. He then blew off his ear wax, then sighed as if he couldn't care less. When Long Xiang heard this, he was immediately enraged. The Lionheart King to him was a god that shouldn't be insulted. Even if the black bearded man was a senior, he shouldn't be so shameless. The enraged Long Xiang waved his sword and released a powerful slash.

Soaring Heaven Sword Qi!

With all of his fury channeled onto this ultimate attack, he would even be able to fatally injure a Level 2 Heaven Ranker.

A Level 1 Heaven Ranker would be instantly killed.

Unexpectedly, beyond everyone's belief, the black bearded man who was only Heaven Rank Level 1 very easily stopped Long Xiang's attack with just his tail, that he used to dig his ears a moment ago.

A sky-splitting and earth-shattering Sword Qi slash was actually

stopped with just a tail, completely disappearing into nothing, as if Long Xiang had never waved his sword. Seeing this, the clown and the others were completely shocked speechless! Long Xiang could only foolishly watch the black bearded man in front of him. He couldn't believe what was happening, he was so shocked that he even forgot to pull back his sword. The black bearded man kept his tail away as if nothing had happened, and glanced at Yue Yang, who was yawning, and Long Xiang, then laughed out: "Actually your attack is quite good, but you are too hot-headed. Young people shouldn't be too hot-headed or you'll suffer easily in the future. You should learn from me and this brat here, keeping it low-key although we are powerful... Nevermind, I don't think the Heaven Realm has many people like him. I shouldn't expect an ordinary person like you to be like him."

When Long Xiang heard this, he almost vomited blood.

In the sky, the invisible force slowly disappeared as a gigantic Golden Griffin slowly descended from the sky above, emitting light as bright as the sun.

On top of the Golden Griffin, there was a mightiful man who was like a God.

He cupped his hands in respect: "Senior Mo Long, Lionheart pays respect to you."

Following that, he flared at Long Xiang: "How dare you! Do you know what kind of prestigious being Senior Mo Long is? Long Xiang, you actually dared to draw your sword against him. Beg for his forgiveness now!"

Long Xiang hurriedly kept his sword away and knelt down to beg forgiveness... The clown, Lei Qie and Demon Marshal Zhi Guang all turned speechless as they stared at the black bearded man. Their shocked expressions seemed to show that they wouldn't believe that the black bearded man was actually Mo Long even if they were beaten to death.

In Heaven Realm, there were many Ancient Giant Dragons, but not every Ancient Giant Dragons was called Mo Long. Mo Long, in the Heaven Realm, was a title that represented one single being, who was a like a killing god from a nightmare. It was said that Mo Long once devastated the whole of South Heaven Realm all by himself. Even the Realm Lords, the Three Great Leaders and the various Region Emperors couldn't do anything. In Heaven Realm, Mo Long's bounty was more than three hundred billion gold. His bounty was the highest in the whole South Heaven Realm for the past hundreds of thousands of years.

Who would have thought that this black bearded man who was only Heaven Rank Level 1 on the surface was actually that legendary Mo Long!

The female giant was scared speechless.

She had never heard of Mo Long before, but she knew that the bounty for this name was three hundred billion gold.

Normal people may not know, but as the leader of the bandit group, she would naturally know about it. Three hundred billion bounty, what kind of abilities would he have to be qualified for that amount of gold?

No, it wouldn't be enough with just abilities!

He must have caused a huge harm to the Heaven Realm, causing the Heaven Realm to lose control of laws and orders, to have a three hundred billion bounty on his head. Normally, those that had ten billion bounty would have caused a certain level of harm. In the whole of Heaven Realm, there were not more than 1000 of them. Those that had bounties of a hundred billion and above would either be Realm Lords, Great Leaders, or Ancient warriors who didn't have any territories.

Those who had two hundred billion bounty and above could be counted with one's fingers.



The female giant had seen Mo Long's name in the bounty list before, but she would never have imagined even in her dreams that the legendary being was actually this black bearded man...

“Brat, did you already know that Lionheart King is coming and used me as a shield? Did you trick me? You have guts, don't you!” The black bearded man suddenly flared up. He grabbed Yue Yang's collars and shouted incessantly. Yue Yang maintained his calm smile until he finished hollering, then replied unhurriedly: “I even dared to pretend to be the Supreme Dragon God's brother, why wouldn't I dare to trick you, the Dragon God's prisoner? Furthermore, if you don't quickly flatter me now, I might just leave you here. You would probably need to wait here for another hundreds of thousands of years.”

“You will walk out on me? Aren't you afraid that I will kill you with one slap? You should know that you are nothing but a mosquito compared to other people!” The black bearded man become even angrier.

“Then why don't you try?” Yue Yang's smile was extremely bright, but that only further the black bearded man's desire to punch his smiling face.

“...” The female giant also felt the same. She realised that when the brat's smile was the brightest, other people would be unlucky!

“Meeting you, brat, was probably the unluckiest thing that happened in my life.” The black bearded man hit his chest frustratedly a few times, then regained his calm. He even revealed a smile and help Yue Yang fix his collar: “Little fellow, you are quite handsome. Your smile is also very good looking, I believe you managed to seduce many ladies out there. Is this flattery good enough for you? Such a good looking brat like you don't seem like you will die young. Lionheart King, what do you think?”

“This little friend is probably someone with god's blessing and protection... Forget about Senior Mo Long, I believe even the Sky

Region Emperor would also praise you.” The Lionheart King sounded polite and modest on the surface: “It’s just that, some of my allies seems to have some kind of misunderstanding with you. Would everyone be willing to unanimously bury the hatchet? If it’s really impossible, why don’t we hold a match to sort it out? According to Heaven Realm rules, we determine superiority with one’s abilities. The winner is the right one, the loser will need to apologize. Otherwise, does Senior Mo Long have any other ideas? I can guarantee that no matter if we lose or win in the future, we will not ask you to take responsibility. Conversely, can you also do that, little friend?”

“...” If it wasn’t for the fact that the black bearded man had not recovered his full strength as he was just released from his seal, he would never negotiate with Lionheart King. However, after being sealed for a long time, his abilities were greatly reduced. He didn’t have the confidence to defeat Lionheart King, so he could only endure this anger for now.

He was depressed in his heart, yet he had no choice but to agree.

His eyes looked to Yue Yang and realised that this brat seemed to have already calculated Lionheart King’s reaction. He was extremely surprised, and his impression of Yue Yang immediately increased a few more points. He then nodded: “We settle it that way then. The strongest one sets the rules!”

When he said this, the female giant was the happiest. Initially, she thought that she wouldn’t be able to get her revenge today. Unexpectedly, an opportunity had come and they could fight each other again.

However, her happiness didn’t last two seconds. Yue Yang had suddenly stepped forward and scolded her: “You, stay at the sides. There’s nothing to do for you here!”

# Chapter 623 – Hornless Dragon VS Heaven Silkworm

---

With regards to Yue Yang's scolding, the female giant felt so angry that her lungs almost burst.

If there was no one around them, she would definitely beat him up with everything she had. If she didn't beat his head to a pig-shaped head, it would be difficult to pacify the hatred in her heart. However, they were surrounded by Mo Long, Lionheart King and other formidable enemies. She took a deep breath and calmed herself down. Although unwillingly, she understood that there is nothing wrong listening to him. With regards to crafting an ingenious plan, this brat was more skilled than her.

"Humph!" the female giant humphed and agreed with Yue Yang.

"Is this real?" Long Xiang, the clown and the others were very surprised. Those who knew the female giant also knew her temper. She would rather die than follow someone else. Someone like her would never compromise. Who would have thought that this brat could actually tame her within a day?

How did this brat do it?

Skeleton man Lei Qie almost wrote a calligraphy of the word "Respect" for Yue Yang.

Even Lionheart King was surprised. In his understanding, Leader Lie Yan would never listen to a man's orders, even if he was a Heaven Ranker.

A stubborn lioness who believed in violence would actually listen to others? Lionheart King suddenly realized a more important question. If even Leader Lie Yan, who was a strong and independent Heaven Ranker would listen to this brat, in the future when this brat solidified his position and joined hands with Leader Lie Yan to recruit even more Heaven Rankers, wouldn't they be

unstoppable? Immediately, Lionheart King had an impulse to kill Yue Yang... Of course, this thought only flashed past in that instant. It disappeared as quickly as it appeared. This young person seemed to have a very close relationship with the Mo Long. If, by chance, he was really someone related to the legendary Supreme Dragon God, even if he was just a tribe member, killing Yue Yang would also be affect him.

Although Mo Long was just released from his seal and that his strength had not fully recovered, Lionheart King didn't have the confidence to defeat Mo Long.

Furthermore, if he failed, the consequences would be unimaginable.

With Mo Long's hatred, when he recovered his strength, the unlucky one wouldn't be only him but the whole of South Heaven Realm.

Lionheart King didn't want to incur Mo Long's wrath, yet he was unable to see through Yue Yang's identity. In order to prevent trouble from his own meddling, he decided to do nothing for now. In any case, power decided everything. Without power, even if one was given a position of high authority, one would not be able to hold the position.

As for this young person, his growth had got nothing to do with him, he would just pretend he didn't see him.

"Firstly, I would like to thank Mo Long and Lionheart King for upholding justice. We are willing to spar with everyone to learn from each other and make new friends, but my power is inadequate, so I hope that you guys will show me some mercy and hold back your power." Yue Yang carelessly pointed to traitor Fu Tou who looked anxious and completely intimidated: "In order to prevent everyone from teasing me that I overestimate my abilities, I hope to get some pointers from the Heaven Ranker Fu Tou. What does Mr. Fu Tou think?"

“...” Long Xiang and the others were speechless when they heard him.

Your power was inadequate? Your power was inadequate yet you can beat the clown until he didn't know which way is north?

Although it may be partly attributed to crafty plots, without sufficiently powerful abilities, the clown wouldn't end up so miserable. Even with the help of Demon Marshal Zhi Guang, Lei Qie and three other Heaven Rankers, he was still able to make the clown cry out miserably. How could he say that his power was inadequate?

The clown's face froze. If he could choose, he would rather pick the female giant Lie Yan to spar with.

Compared to her, this abnormal brat's abilities were his nemesis.

Especially in his current wounded situation, their compatibility was even worse than before... Of course, the clown still had enough confidence that if there wasn't any tricks or plots, even if he couldn't defeat Yue Yang, he would at least be able to fight evenly with him, or even gain a slight upperhand.

However, the first person this brat picked was Fu Tou. The clown didn't think that Fu Tou would last ten strikes against Yue Yang.

Naturally, Fu Tou understood his own capabilities. Picking a fight with Yue Yang was equivalent to seeking death.

However, he couldn't reject the fight because this was the battle that will determine the alliance of Mo Long and Lionheart King. If he rejected the fight, it would be equivalent to disrespecting the Mo Long and Lionheart King. That would be worse than digging his own grave. Currently, his only hope was that among the clown, Lei Qie and Demon Marshal Zhi Guang, one of them could step forward and volunteer themselves to fight and put a stop on all of this. Otherwise, he would definitely die today.

The clown stood coldly without any expression. His face which

was painted colourfully seemed to be smiling, but was actually filled with rejection and coldness.

Skeleton Man Lei Qie dug out a big fat maggot from his eye socket and pretended not to see Fu Tou's pitiful, begging look. He threw the maggot into his mouth and slowly chewed...

Only the bald Demon Marshal Zhi Guang suddenly stepped forward with a slight smile. He first paid his respects to Mo Long and LionHeart King, then smiled warmly at Yue Yang as if they were old friends that had not met each other for a long time: "Fu Tou is injured, it's inconvenient for him to fight. Furthermore, he is too rough, so he may not be able to control his strength. It wouldn't be good if one couldn't receive the attacks and was injured. If this little friend and Leader Lie Yan agrees, Zhi Guang would like to volunteer sparring with you and exchange some pointers. In order not to take up too much of the two seniors' time, I propose that we only exchange 100 blows and stop afterwards."

"Your honor Zhi Guang's suggestion is splendid, however, you are missing a prize." Yue Yang pretended that he had a severe gambling addiction and must wager something with his opponent no matter what.

"Since you said so, how about the winner can have a favor from the loser? If it is not too difficult, I will accept it." Demon Marshal Zhi Guang understood that the prize that Yue Yang wanted was definitely the traitor Fu tou. If he loses, he wouldn't be able to protect him, so he might as well be more generous instead.

When the traitor Fu Tou heard this suggestion, his complexion immediately paled.

He could only pin his hopes on Demon Marshal Zhi Guang now. He must win, or at least have a draw. Otherwise, he would definitely die in a very ugly way...

Skeleton Man Lei Qie, the clown and Long Xiang looked at each other. They felt a little pressured over Yue Yang's suggestion of a

wager and a prize. It could be said that this brat's motive was that if he lost, Demon Marshal Zhi Guang couldn't ask for Leader Lie Yan's life. However, if Demon Marshal Zhi Guang lose, Fu Tou would be handed over. This brat didn't lose anything and could only stand to profit from this suggestion. Even if Demon Marshal Zhi Guang was stronger, he would definitely feel some pressure.

With regards to this brat who was always smiling and didn't flinch when killing a person, they were completely terrified of him.

This brat had not completely matured, but he was already this powerful.

In another hundreds of years, what would happen if he matured?

The clown looked at Mo Long and discovered that the black-bearded guy was already 100% on Yue Yang's side. He sighed a little. It was a pity that Mo Long appeared. Otherwise even if he had to give his all, he would definitely kill this brat. If he was unable to kill him this time, it would be difficult to get this kind of opportunity to kill him in the future!

"Your honor, I'm leaving this to you." Fu Tou quickly bowed to Demon Marshal Zhi Guang. Zhi Guang was willing to fight on his behalf, so he was naturally grateful to him. If it wasn't because the clown was watching at the side, Fu Tou would have sworn eternal loyalty to Zhi Guang. Fu Tou understood that he was currently relying on the clown's group. Even if the clown's group was defeated here, the clown was an extremely sinister person. If Fu Tou changed his loyalty to Demon Marshal Zhi Guang, even if he didn't die today, he would definitely be killed by the clown in the future. Fu Tou definitely didn't dare to offend the clown too much.

"I shall try my best!" Demon Marshal Zhi Guang wouldn't even feel this pressured if he was fighting the female giant Lie Yan, who was the stronger one. At this time, he didn't dare to guarantee his words.

“This junior hopes that your honor Zhi Guang can teach me some pointers. This junior will definitely gain much from this battle, hence I will thank you first in advance.” Although Yue Yang sounded modest, his actions was completely the opposite. He continued to summon his beasts from his grimoire one by one.

The first to come out was the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying who was an expert in water battles.

When Mo Long saw this, he was a little astounded, yet he nodded his head slightly. He felt that it was reasonable that Yue Yang would have such a Guardian Beast. He was a guy who dared to pretend to be the Supreme Dragon God’s brother after all. Without the Eastern Goblin Tribe’s Hornless Dragon, it would really be hard to pull it off.

The second one to appear was the Spirit of Heaven Fire.

She was Yue Yang’s first choice to deal with Demon Marshal Zhi Guang who possessed the Binding Silk Threads Inherent Skill. As for Nirvana Flames, Yue Yang didn’t plan on revealing it to them.

Following closely behind was the Bloody Queen Red who was holding the Crescent Moon Blade in her hands... Her super speed, Banshee Scream and Whip of Agony were all very effective for victory. Before knowing Demon Marshal Zhi Guang’s ultimate technique, Yue Yang needed Bloody Queen’s speed for support to put pressure on his opponent. The last one to appear was Xiao Wen Li. This little lamia loli was his biggest asset.

“Just how many Guardian Beasts do you have?” Skeleton Man Lei Qie’s chin almost dropped to the ground. Four Guardian beasts? Wasn’t that too much?

“...” At this time, female giant Lie Yan started to believe that Yue Yang was Supreme Dragon God’s brother a little.

If he wasn’t Supreme Dragon God’s brother, how could he be so abnormal?



The clown, Long Xiang and Demon Marshal Zhi Guang became completely white. They almost had a heart attack. They knew that this brat was hiding his true strength, but they never thought that he actually had four Guardian Beasts. Forget about a Guardian Beast, other people may not even have a grimoire. Even if they had one, they would probably only have one Guardian Beast. Who else could have four Guardian Beasts like him? Furthermore, all of them were actually Holy Beasts!

Even Lionheart King, who was floating in the sky, and Mo Long, who was lazily sitting on top of an Ancient Island Whale and crossing his legs, were a little affected. They had seen high-levelled Guardian Beasts before, but they had never seen someone possessing so many Guardian Beasts.

Yue Yang didn't seem to know when to stop. When everyone was still disoriented and in shock, he once again summoned another Guardian Beast, Giant Phantom Shadow, and stuck them to Hornless Dragon Girl Jiang Ying, Bloody Queen Red and himself.

“Gods, you are too unfair!”

At this time, Skeleton Man Lei Qie ran and banged his skull on the cruise ship ruins on the lake. He looked very sad, as if he didn't want to live in this world anymore. He was a Heaven Ranker without a grimoire, so he was destined to have limited potential in this lifetime. Due to a very special series of circumstances, he managed to level up to Heaven Rank Level 4. However, he wouldn't be able to grow stronger anymore in the future.

To him, the saddest thing in his life was being unable to form a contract with a summoning grimoire.

Now, seeing that Yue Yang not only had a summoning grimoire but also five different Guardian Beasts, he was so sad that he became a total mess. He wanted to cry, but he didn't have any tears!

Demon Marshal Zhi Guang at this time was also grumbling

bitterly.

Although he had a summoning grimoire, his Guardian Beast was a Heaven Silkworm. Coupled with his Binding Silk Threads Inherent Skill, his abilities were not so bad, so he was actually quite contented in his heart. However, when he saw Yue Yang's Guardian Beasts ensemble, each stronger than the previous, each more bewitching than the previous. He almost felt embarrassed summoning his ugly Heaven Silkworm.

“Please guide me well!” Yue Yang pretended to bow politely. However, Spirit of Heaven Fire and Bloody Queen Red thought that it was some kind of signal, they immediately attacked Demon Marshal Zhi Guang.

“Chi!”

There was someone quicker than the two of them. It was Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying who was standing on top of the lake.

Other people would have been affected by this Boundary of Death. Jiang Ying was the only one whose power was amplified many times. When she stepped on the surface of the lake and threw a punch towards Demon Marshal Zhi Guang, the surface of the lake seemed to become her weapon. The body of water actually turned into a water dragon that looked like the Dragon Electric Eel. It possessed such a powerful dragonic power that even the black bearded man was a little surprised. The water dragon rose to the sky with a loud howl and headed straight towards Demon Marshal Zhi Guang.

This was bad!

Demon Marshal Zhi Guang initially could easily avoid that. Who would have known that the water dragon's unique power actually locked his movements. Furthermore, there was some kind of pressure on the dragon power that made him unable to move even an inch. He could only watch helplessly as the water dragon prepared to engulf him.

Lionheart King could see that this was definitely not the Hornless Dragon girl's power!

This was the power of the Supreme Dragon God's seal!

And she had borrowed it...

"Heaven Silkworm Protection!" Demon Marshal Zhi Guang was deeply worried and he quickly summoned his giant Heaven Silkworm and ordered it to protect him.

## Chapter 624 – Undefeatable, Divine Beast's Divine Will!

---

Compared to the water dragon, the Heaven Silkworm that possessed a gigantic body was like a bait to a big fish.

There was completely no grounds for comparison.

The water dragon that contained the full might of a dragon swallowed the Heaven Silkworm whole.

However, Demon Marshal Zhi Guang managed to escape by a hair's breadth. Before he could even take a breath, Bloody Queen Red had already flown towards him, unleashing her Whip of Agony that danced like lightning. Countless Binding Silk Threads then formed in Demon Marshal Zhi Guang's hands, and then it expanded as if it was a living thing, as Demon Marshal Zhi Guang prepared to bind the extremely agile Bloody Queen Red. Towards an enemy with a high speed like her, using brute force was useless as she was too agile... Spirit of Heaven Fire created a tornado and charged forward, overtaking the Bloody Queen Red who was retreating and jumped towards the Binding Silk Threads.

The Binding Silk Threads made of magic essence were completely sucked into the tornado. With the Spirit of Heaven Fire's heat, it slowly burned and turned into smoke.

Indeed, the Spirit of Heaven Fire was the Guardian Beast summoned to disable his Binding Silk Threads.

With regards to this battle situation, Demon Marshal Zhi Guang had actually already predicted that the water and fire-type beasts were the main attacking force while that speed-type female demon and restriction-type lamia were the support. With the additional support from the special-type Phantom Shadow, they formed an almost perfect combination.

“Golden Ring.”

Demon Marshal Zhi Guang was not someone with a limited repertoire of skills in his arsenal. His bounty was over 650 million gold, higher than the female giant Lie Yan. He was whom everyone thought was the strongest after Lionheart King and Mo Long. His abilities were actually quite powerful. He released a blast of golden light energy, and his body turned into a golden statue. Then, he used the same kind of golden light energy and condense them into 2 golden rings. One of the golden ring protected his bald head while the other golden ring expanded to 3 metres in diameter and rotated wildly, protecting his body.

At the same time, black light with traces of gold exploded from the bottom of Demon Marshal Zhi Guang's feet.

The black light quickly pervade the air and morphed into a Heaven Silkworm-like appearance.

This was Demon Marshal's Zhi Guang unique skill, 'Heavenly Worm Domain'. It would be even more powerful if it was combined with his Guardian Beast Heaven Silkworm.

"Greedy Parasitic Worm." Demon Marshal Zhi Guang started waving his hands, and a swarm of insect eggs shot out. Every single insect egg quickly incubated and hatched, turning into various types of ugly-looking worms. They floated to the sky and greedily swarmed towards Spirit of Heaven Fire. Spirit of Heaven Fire let out a powerful flame, but those insects were not afraid of fire. Even fire burning their bodies wasn't enough to stop them from attacking aggressively... When their bodies burned and become charred, something suddenly broke out from those charred old shells, and they turned into Flame Moths.

On the other side, the swarm of ugly worms that flew towards Jiang Ying, who was standing on the lake surface, were shot with water arrows. However, what came out from their broken bodies were Poison Spiders.

From the Whip of Agony's attack, the insect that broke out from

the ugly worms broken shells were Demon-faced Butterflies that used mental attacks.

These ugly worms were strong lifeforms that were unkillable.

Bloody Queen Red brandished her Crescent Moon blade and cut hundreds of ugly worms and Demon-faced Butterflies to half.

However, the strange thing was that those ugly worms that were slashed apart could actually regrow from their heads or their tails. One insect multiplied and became two insects instead. Those Demon-faced Butterflies also swooped down to the ground and exploded. Their bodies were destroyed and turned into countless insect eggs...

Seeing that her flame, thunder and storm were unable to damage her enemies, Spirit of Heaven Fire had a bewildered and confused look at first. She stood still at her original location, unable to decide what to do. Then, she turned and looked at Yue Yang, hoping that her master could give her an order. This was the first time that she took the initiative to hand over the battle strategy to Yue Yang, her master. Previously, she wasn't even able to think of this. However, as her intelligence increased, she started to understand the process of thinking. Although she could only think a little, it was still a huge improvement.

“Chi chi!”

All the insects didn't dare to penetrate deeply into Spirit of heaven Fire's core. The power in her core was a trace of Nirvana Flame. This was an existence that all kinds of lifeforms were afraid of.

These worms swarmed all around Spirit of Heaven Fire and tried to gain advantage through their numbers. The huge swarm of insects formed a black cloud and began to pursue Bloody Queen Red!

On the lake surface, those worms that had attacked Hornless

Dragon Jiang Ying met with difficulties instead.

“Not good!” The female giant Lie Yan who only fought using physical attacks were helpless towards these Greedy Parasitic Worms that could even devour bones.

“No wonder he was ranked above us!” The clown, Long Xiang and Lei Qie started to understand a little.

Why was Demon Marshal’s bounty higher than the rest? Why was he able to win against the clown and Lei Qie even when he was just a one man show? Seemed like it was because of these ugly worms that wouldn’t die no matter how many times they were killed.

Long Xiang shook his head. He was a Royal Knight that was number one in terms of close combat sword art, but towards these worms, he wouldn’t be able to do anything. Although Skeleton Man Lei Qie would be able to avoid being devoured, he wouldn’t be able to destroy those worms. The clown was feeling a little proud in himself as he had an idea on how to kill those worms and even how to break Demon Marshal Zhi Guang’s ‘Heavenly Worm Domain’. However, he would never say it to others.

The more Yue Yang suffered and became miserable, the more advantages he would have.

Of course, the clown didn’t think that Yue Yang would lose.

This abnormal brat wouldn’t be a threat to him if he was that easily defeated from these worms.

Forget about this brat, even that girl, who could use the Code’s Power, was an expert in mental attacks and artifacts would be able to defeat these worms easily. These worms were aggressive in nature because it was their natural instinct. However, their true battle power was actually very low.

“Boring!” Yue Yang yawned widely.

The swarm of worms filled up the whole sky, looking like black

clouds.

He ignored all these, as if he didn't see anything at all. That kind of calm attitude made the female giant Lie Yan worry about him.

However, the only one who was worried about him in the whole place was her. People like the Lionheart King and black bearded man didn't think that Yue Yang would lose. After all, these ugly worms were small fries. The truly powerful monsters in Heaven Realm wouldn't try to win through numbers. Usually they would only have 1 body, or at least two bodies. Those monsters, that depend on their numbers to survive, were actually quite weak. It was just that amongst those with restraining attributes, they were able to show off some skills.

They forced Bloody Queen Red to fly about and Spirit of Heaven Fire to be at a loss on what to do. They quickly flew to Xiao Wen Li.

The little lamia loli looked extremely calm as she raised her hand. Her small, white and soft hand slowly danced.

A bright white light that was pleasant to the eyes lighted up from her hand. The light was harmless to people, and it was warm, clean and spotless. It made others feel that they were bathed in the warmth of spring wind, their bodies feeling like they were submerged within a warm and comfortable hot springs.

However, this harmless white light actually made the Skeleton Man Lei Qie's body burn with black smoke. He miserably cried out in pain.

"Dammit, I'm already unlucky enough today. My bones!" The body of Skeleton Man Lei Qie who was a Heaven Ranker started burning ablaze. He hurriedly use a tattered robe to wrap himself up and hid behind Long Xiang to protect himself from being exposed to the white light. With just this simple light, his body which was unscratchable with swords were actually filled with cracks.



It was really unthinkable. If Skeleton Man Lei Qie couldn't move and was exposed to that white light, what would he become?

Under the white light, those swarm of ugly worms melted and disappeared like ice and snow.

None of them were left, every single one of them was destroyed.

The worms retreated frantically from the white light, trying to return back to Heavenly Worm Domain. However, they weren't fast enough to outrun the white light. Only few worms which stayed within Demon Marshal Zhi Guang's Heavenly Worm Domain managed to survive. It was a negligible number. Hundreds of thousands of worms that filled up the whole sky were completely wiped out within a few seconds.

It was as if these ugly worms had never existed in the first place!

At this time, everyone started seeing the little lamia loli Xiao Wen Li in a different light.

"It's a Divine Beast's Divine Will!" At first, Lionheart King doubted his eyes, but after seeing Xiao Wen Li's purification, he immediately deduced her identity. It was the unrivalled Divine Beast's Divine Will hence all those ugly worms were easily purified by her. In front of this Divine beast, whatever counter attributes and rebirth abilities became a joke. Lifeforms that were killed by the Divine Will wouldn't be able to easily revive even if they were Heaven Ranked and possessed a strong soul, let alone these small worms that had weak souls and no intelligence.

"..." Demon Marshal Zhi Guang shook his head and smiled bitterly the second time.

Actually, before he even released the Greedy Parasitic Worms, he already know that Yue Yang wouldn't be defeated by his worms.

However, he never thought that his worms would be defeated so quickly and thoroughly.

Facing against a Divine Beast, these Greedy Parasitic Worms'

death were justified!

Fortunately this Divine Beast had not yet matured. If she matured and attain her peak realm, Demon Marshal Zhi Guang believed that he would die miserably with one attack from her. Currently, she could already kill his worm swarms in an instant, her powers were already considered very strong.

Even in this vast, limitless Heaven Realm, how many Divine Beasts were there?

He daresay that no matter how many Divine Beasts there were, their numbers were definitely fewer than those who were Heaven Rank Level 5 and above!

This number also included independent Divine Beasts. If they were to only count Divine Beasts contracted in a grimoire, the number was even fewer. Divine Beasts were an existence that Heaven Rankers could only wish but never acquire!

Other than having 5 Guardian Beasts, this abnormal brat actually had a Divine Beast amongst them. No wonder he was so arrogant... Demon Marshal Zhi Guang was so jealous he wished he could die. His Heavenly Silkworm would probably not be able to evolve into a Divine Beast in this lifetime. As for his other normal beasts, it was not worth mentioning! At this time, the ugly clown glared at Xiao Wen Li, his eyes were filled with so much jealousy that it seemed like blood was about to come out from them. He even dreamt about obtaining a Divine Beasts in his sleep, but unfortunately, he didn't have that kind of luck... The thing that really pushed the clown to the edge was not because he didn't have a Divine Beast, it was because his enemy had one!

Lei Qie was right, this world was too unfair.

Why were they so generous to that brat? Forget about having 5 Guardian Beasts, he even had a Divine Beast. It was really too unfair!

Skeleton Man Lei Qie pretended not to see. He couldn't even say he was jealous. Forget about Divine Beast, he didn't even have a grimoire!

The female giant was extremely happy. She couldn't stop herself from smacking Yue Yang's back.

If she didn't do that, she wouldn't be able to suppress the happiness in her heart.

This brat was really abnormal, but his abnormality was an inspiration... Right now, since she had already prepared her heart, she earnestly hoped that this brat become even more abnormal!

"Oh, this is getting interesting." The black bearded man Mo Long was initially lying down lazily, but he was sitting up now. He gave Yue Yang a serious looking glance and then slightly glanced at Lionheart King, who had descended a few hundred meters down from the sky to observe Yue Yang more clearly. His lips tilted a little with a ridiculing smile. Previously, if Lionheart King didn't care about everything at all and tried to kill this brat, Mo Long would not do anything to stop him. However, right now, he would definitely stop him with all of his power.

Let's forget about the possibility of this brat being related to him.

If he told those old farts that there was this abnormal person in this world, they would definitely be very happy. This brat was definitely the key to him regaining his freedom.

Lionheart King felt Mo Long's gaze on him, and he shivered. Not good, he was too impatient, seemed like Mo Long had misunderstood him.

He quickly erased his aura, showing that he did not harbor harmful intentions.

With Mo Long here, trying to kill this brat would be the most foolish thing to do in the whole world!

On the contrary, this brat was still growing. If he invested in the

brat just a little, maybe he would be able to receive a huge return of his investments. Lionheart King was a clever individual who would think of hundreds of different scenarios. He made a new decision in that instasnt. Of course, no one knew what he was truly thinking, other than the black bearded man, Mo Long, who had been living for hundreds of thousands of years and was an expert in seeing other's true colours.

The black bearded man's mouth slanted. His ridiculing smile became even more skewed as he reverted to his reclining position, lazily lying down on the ground. Crossing one of his leg over the other, he swung his leg once in a while.

In the sky, Demon Marshal Zhi Guang, who was utterly defeated in comparing beasts, flew out, engaging Yue Yang in a close combat fight.

One was holding a golden ring while the other was holding the Tao Tie blade.

The two weapons clashed and created a huge explosion...

The weird thing was, both Lionheart King and Mo Long didn't pay attention to Yue Yang and Demon Marshal Zhi Guang's fight. Instead, they were looking at the Hornless Dragon Girl Jiang Ying, who was standing on the lake. At this time, deep, deep into the bottom of the lake, a special kind of energy started to come out and entered Hornless Dragon Girl Jiang Ying's body endlessly. Her body, slowly, very slowly, emitted a bright light, and in the end, she turned into a gigantic Golden Divine Dragon, flying towards the sky!

Everyone in that place felt some kind of force was pressuring against their body.

Including Lionheart King and Mo Long.

Although the power of this kind of 'force' was quite weak, it was definitely present. Furthermore, it was similar to the kind of force

that the little lamia loli was emitting just now, it was Divine Beast's Divine Will!

Two Divine Beasts?

This brat possessed two Divine Beasts?

The clown almost vomited blood. He glared at the lake, as if hoping that he would be able to snatch Yue Yang's Guardian Beast in this way.

It was really funny.

A tall pillar of light shot up to the sky, and Jiang Ying's grimoire voluntarily floated in front of her. The Golden Divine Dragon coiled around the pillar that came out from the grimoire and descended, entering Jiang Ying's body. The Boundary of Death that supported the Ancient Demon Shark, Ancient Island Whale and Electric Dragon Eel popped like a bubble, shattering into millions of light particles and returned to Jiang Ying's grimoire...

At this time, the water in the lake started boiling. Countless dragon-shaped water flew to the sky and all of them bowed towards Jiang Ying, who was still closing her eyes.

The Electric Dragon Eel, Ancient Demon Shark, and Ancient Island Whale in the sky, and the Cuttlefish King in the water also bowed in respect. A kind of undeniably powerful Dragon Power was born from her body. At this moment, it was as if she had become the Supreme Dragon God in the legends.

"My goodness, she has inherited the God's Power that Supreme Dragon God had left here. It's such a shame for me, why didn't I get it although I've been here for hundreds of thousands of years!" The black bearded man jumped in that instant, his expression was both shocked and sad. Lionheart King was also extremely shocked. Fortunately, he was able to react quickly. This wasn't the true Supreme Dragon God, it was just a Hornless Dragon that had inherited the God's Power!

When Jiang Ying opened her eyes, the whole sky was filled with her Divine Will.

Her unrivalled Dragon Power overshadowed even the heavens and earth!

# Chapter 625 – Traitor? Let him become dog food!

---

The unrivalled Dragon Power made everyone's expression change.

Fortunately the duration of the power was short, otherwise the lower-levelled bandits would be shocked to death. When the golden light was shining the brightest, Jiang Ying's body transformed into a rainbow coloured light and returned to Yue Yang's grimoire world. Furthermore, Yue Yang had this feeling that in that same instant, Jiang Ying invited the surprised Qilin girl Bing Yin to the second Divine Grimoire.

Jiang Ying disappeared without a trace, it was as if everything was just a dream.

The thousands of water-shaped dragon all turned back into water and fell back into the lake.

The Ancient Demon Shark, Ancient Island Whale, Electric Dragon Eel and Cuttlefish King that were worshipping Jiang Ying just now immediately returned to normal once the Dragon Power disappeared, reverting back to their majestic, Ancient Giant Beast pride.

In reality, with their power, they would not even be this respectful towards the strongest being here, the Lionheart King or their fellow prisoner inmate Mo Long.

The one that they truly respect was also not Jiang Ying, but the God's Power that she had inherited... that was the Supreme Dragon God's God Power. Even if there was only a little, it was still able to invoke a sense of fear from within their soul. Not only them, even the black bearded man Mo Long also felt a sense of respect. Although Supreme Dragon God had imprisoned him for hundreds of thousands of years, making him very angry with

Supreme Dragon God, he had never truly hated Supreme Dragon God. He also didn't dare to harbor any disrespectful feelings towards him.

“What do you think about this?” Skeleton Man Lei Qie secretly asked Long Xiang.

“Demon Marshal Zhi Guang has already been intimidated. We will definitely lose this battle.” Long Xiang didn't think that Demon Marshal Zhi Guang was in a good position. Let's forget about the abnormality of the brat first, even the Hornless Dragon had inherited Supreme Dragon God's Power. This had completely thrown Demon Marshal Zhi Guang's mind in disarray, he was completely unable to continue the battle.

“Let's call this battle a draw!”

Yue Yang suddenly put away his Tao Tie Blade. If they continued to fight, he would definitely still have the upper hand, but it would be difficult to inflict heavy damage to Demon Marshal Zhi Guang.

It would be even more difficult to kill him!

Furthermore, in front of the Lionheart King, Yue Yang definitely wouldn't reveal his World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame. Even previously, when he revealed the Invisible Innate Sword Qi “Gui Cang Sword” to attack the clown, Yue Yang was a little regretful. That time, he thought that he would be able to mortally wound the clown. However, unexpectedly, even though he managed to hit that fellow's weakest point, the forehead, he was still able to escape quickly. In this battle, Yue Yang's biggest improvement was his sword's potential, not sword's power... Gui Cang Sword's power was definitely enough to kill the clown, but because he was still unable to fully utilise his sword's potential, he was unable to intimidate the clown and failed in killing him.

If he was able to master “Elder's Heart” and attain the true Elder Innate Realm, the result would be completely different.



In another words, if Zhi Zun had used the same power to kill the clown, he would definitely be dead...

This was the difference between Zhi Zun and Yue Yang.

It wasn't that Yue Yang didn't have enough killing power, it was just that he had not attained the kind of ultimate power that Zhi Zun had, the true Elder Innate Realm!

Yue Yang realised that this kind of Elder Innate Realm did not exist within the Heaven Ranked clown, Demon Marshal Zhi Guang, Long Xian, Lei Qie and the others. The only one who had attained such a realm was the black bearded man Mo Long. Even the 400 million gold bounty Lionheart King only had a little. He had not attained the kind of ultimate power that Zhi Zun and Mo Long had, the kind that could ignore the existence of every single being.

Through this comparison, Yue Yang really couldn't imagine how Zhi Zun managed to attain her power.

"In three months, in Lionheart King's Royal Griffin Palace, I hereby invite Leader Lie Yan and this little friend to come and fight. The clown actually wanted to fight a battle with Yue Yang, but he understood his limits.

He had managed to cover the heavy wound on his forehead, but his body had taken a huge toll.

He had the confidence to fight Yue Yang and not lose, but it seemed impossible if he wanted to take a step further and kill him.

Helpless, he could only choose to fight again after keeping his wound under control. Although three months was too short for him to recover, the clown knew that he wouldn't have a chance if that Hornless Dragon Girl who inherited the Supreme Dragon God's Power finished evolving. He estimated that the Hornless Dragon Girl would still be in evolution after 3 months and wouldn't be able to fight. After all, the Supreme Dragon God's

Power was not a power that could be easily inherited... The clown had come to this decision after careful deliberation, he needed to carefully plan it out and even think about how to counter attack the Spirit of Heaven Fire and the Bloody Queen.

As for that little lamia loli that never left Yue Yang's side, the clown didn't want to think about her at the meantime, because he didn't have any way to counter her.

Even Lionheart King also felt that the little lamia loli would not be able to be handled easily.

When every single beast was worshiping the Hornless Dragon after she inherited the God's Power, only she remained unmoved. This was definitely not because of her pride as a Divine Beast, it was because her own bloodline was of a superior race. Even if the Hornless Dragon Girl was able to inherit the God's Power, she was not as powerful as her original race.

"No problem, we can fight again after three months." Yue Yang nodded and agreed. After this battle, he had already had some kind of revelation. Although he was still unable to fully grasp the concept of Elder's Heart, he was quite close, and he was even able to understand it a little. As long as he had some time, he would definitely be able to attain the true Elder Innate Realm. Three months wasn't a long time, but to Yue Yang, it was more than enough.

"Senior Mo Long, farewell for now." Seeing that Yue Yang had agreed, Lionheart King respectfully bowed towards Mo Long, then rode the Golden Griffin that was shining brightly like the sun away. He quickly left and disappeared without a trace.

Long Xiang also quickly paid his respects to Mo Long then quickly follow behind his master.

After bowing his head in respect, the clown, Skeleton Man Lei Qie and the others ignored Fu Tou's pleading gaze and brought two other Heaven Rankers and their remaining subordinates and left

heartlessly.

“No, no!” The traitor Fu Tou shook his head in despair and reached out towards the clown, hoping that he would bring him along.

However, the clown didn’t even glance at him.

Fu Tou was really regretful this time, he felt that he had been abandoned.

Of course, this was extremely normal. Under the situation where he was no longer useful, who would want to get on Yue Yang’s bad side for a useless person? Furthermore, behind him, there was still the ancient criminal Mo Long supporting him. After Lionheart King left, staying here one more second meant putting oneself in danger for one more second. Mo Long had not recovered his power, but the Ancient Demon Shark, Ancient Island Whale, Electric Dragon Eel and Cuttlefish King were all not vegetarians. Furthermore, Mo Long even stopped Long Xiang’s all out attack with just his tail before. Whenever he thought about all these, the clown and Lei Qie couldn’t help but to be bitterly disappointed.

Demon Marshal Zhi Guang looked at Fu Tou and sighed: “I’m sorry, I can only do so much.”

He bowed slightly towards Yue Yang and Mo Long.

Then, he turned around and left.

“So boring!” Mo Long yawned, he was completely uninterested towards the traitor Fu Tou who was currently prostrating himself in front of the female giant Lie Yan, begging for mercy. He floated towards Yue Yang and observed him carefully, as if he wanted to get to know him once again from the beginning. He then patted Yue Yang’s shoulders and said: “Brat, I’m seeing you in a good light. Maybe you are Supreme Dragon God’s brother. Otherwise, how would your beast managed to inherit the Supreme Dragon God’s Power? Even I haven’t been able to although I’ve been stuck here

for the past hundreds of thousands of years. However, this way is also good. The Heaven Realm needs more capable young people like you, otherwise, it would be very lonely! Oh right, you haven't built up your family fortune, right? As your boss, I shall gift you with this Ancient Island Whale. In the future if you meet with good fortune, don't forget about this boss here, okay!"

"Who's the boss? You want to be my boss? No way, you are not qualified!" Yue Yang disagreed strongly.

"If I'm not your boss, then are you the boss? I'm older and also stronger than you. No matter what we compare each other with, I will definitely win over you. You still want to be my boss?" The black bearded man grabbed onto Yue Yang's collar and threatened him: "Why don't we fight it out to decide who's the boss?"

"Don't have to fight it out. I suddenly realised that it's a good thing to have a dependable boss temporarily. I shall receive the Ancient Island Whale." Yue Yang definitely wouldn't fight against Mo Long. That was simply asking for a beating!

"Temporary boss?" The black bearded man didn't understand. How could there be a temporary boss?

"You are a little stronger than me now, but in the future I might be a little stronger than you. Since it is like this, it wouldn't be proper if I call you my boss. Why don't we do this instead: We take turns being the boss. Whoever is stronger will be the boss, so for now you are the temporary boss. In the future if I'm stronger than you, you will have to call me your boss!" Yue Yang had never gotten the short end of the stick in his life.

"Brat, you want to overtake me?" It was as if the black bearded man Mo Long heard something funny, he laughed until his body convulsed.

"That's a possibility." Yue Yang was fully confident.

"Alright, I shall give you a chance. If you can overtake me, then I

will call you my boss.” The black bearded man reached out and patted Yue Yang’s shoulders, laughing out loud: “Hopefully you can quickly overtake me, don’t make me wait too long.”

“Why don’t we sign a contract?” Yue Yang pulled out a contract out of nowhere.

“Put that away quickly! I immediately get headaches when I see a contract. This stupid thing makes me suffer my whole life. Until now, I regret signing a contract with humans. I will never be duped by anyone anymore.” The black bearded man was not stupid. He rejected signing the contract. Seems like he had been tricked by someone else previously. It was really befitting of the idiom ‘once bitten, twice shy.’

“With your IQ, it’s normal to suffer losses. However, suffering losses is also a form of happiness, it won’t hurt to suffer a bit more.” Yue Yang’s smile was really asking for a beating.

“You are going to be the death of me!” the black bearded man immediately became furious. He really wanted to beat Yue Yang up, but he was afraid that once he beat him, the Ancient Island Whale that he gave to this brat as a bribe would be wasted, hence he restrained himself. Before he left, he didn’t forget to remind Yue Yang: “Brat, see how good it is when the boss is me? I could give you a whale just like that. In the future, if you have good fortune, don’t forget to show filial respect to me... Ah, right, If you see that old fellow Supreme Dragon God, remember to speak well of me. I shall go back into hiding. That whatever meeting in the plaza, you can go by yourself, but remember to mention my name. With my name’s protection, that Lionheart King wouldn’t dare to harm you!”

“Understood, in the future when I become your boss, I will also extend my protection onto you.” Yue Yang chuckled and waved his hand.

“You...” the black bearded man was so angry that he fell from the

Ancient Demon Shark's back.

The Ancient Demon Shark carried the black bearded man and swam around in the sky.

The Cuttlefish King followed.

That extremely long Electric Dragon Eel coiled around them and floated away under the sunset.

The extremely well-behaved Ancient Island Whale stayed behind. It wasn't Mo Long's beast actually, it was just prison-mate. It initially wanted to follow Mo Long, but seeing that Yue Yang, this young person, seemed to have a bright future ahead of him, it felt that it didn't matter too much if it didn't follow Mo Long and happily stayed behind.

It didn't have high expectations, as long as it was able to enjoy some freedom, it would be enough.

On its back, the female giant was wildly beating up Fu Tou. She controlled the strength in her hands so that the traitor wouldn't die easily. He needed to suffer through the greatest torture. Fu Tou begged with his life as he hugged his head with his hands and curled his body to protect himself. Against the female giant, he didn't have any chance of retaliating. Furthermore there was that abnormal Yue Yang. Other than pretending to be pitiful, he had no other way out.

"Wait a minute, don't beat him to death." Yue Yang advised the female giant leader Lie Yan, hinting that the traitor was still useful.

"What?" the female giant didn't understand. What kind of thing would this person be useful for?

"I have a watchdog that really need a good meal to nourish its body. If it can eat this traitor, it should be able to level up." Yue Yang explained that the traitor could still be used as dog food.

"No, no... Big sister, please just kill me. I don't want to become

dog food!” The traitor Fu Tou who was begging for his life with all his being was scared shitless. Now, his wish had become completely the opposite as he begged the female giant to kill him quickly. He really couldn’t image himself becoming a dog food, he couldn’t imagine the pain of a dog slowly eating through his body. Rather than being eaten by a dog, he would rather die.

Of course, the choice was not in his hands...

# Chapter 626 – Goodbye

---

Night fell as the Ancient Island Whale started to slowly float away from the lake.

It was just like a giant floating island suspended in mid-air.

Slowly, it flew towards the Rainbow City ahead.

“What do we do next?” The female giant was someone who usually had her own opinion, but after this battle, she suddenly felt that she was not very suited to make decisions. Becoming a leader wasn’t her forte. If there was someone else in charge of planning battle strategies and she only needed to charge ahead to the enemy’s lines, she would be able to showcase her strength better. She felt that she should discuss with Yue Yang if he was willing to be their strategist so that she could rebuild Raging Flame Chivalrous Bandit Group. Maybe he would think that this was a good idea: “Hey, do you want to join up with me and rebuild the Raging Flame Chivalrous Bandit Group? This grandpa (Shiro: Lie Yan is referring to herself as grandfather, which, in the patriarchal Chinese context means that she is the older, wiser and the leader. The ‘I’ here is similar to oresama) can listen to your wishes or orders, but the bandit group’s name must be Raging Flame. This was my father’s wish. Oh, right, my name is Lie Yan, what’s your name? And what’s that little girl’s name?”

“Don’t call yourself grandpa this, grandpa that. You are the leader of a chivalrous bandit group, not a gang leader. This annoying catchphrase of yours really needs to be changed! Furthermore, isn’t your group disbanded already? In my opinion, you shouldn’t establish your whatever bandit group already, you are not suited to be a leader.” Yue Yang was extremely direct in his speech, his words cutting and sharp.

“What?” the female giant immediately glared at Yue Yang furiously.



“Pretend I never said anything.” Yue Yang yawned as if he didn’t have any care in the world.

“Let that little girl out, this grandpa, ah, this group leader wants to talk to her. It’s a waste of my energy talking to you!” the female giant was prepared to enter via the backdoor route. She knew that it would be difficult to change Yue Yang’s mind, but she had confidence in convincing Yi Nan.

However, the thing that she completely didn’t expect was that not only Yi Nan was not convinced by her, she actually tried to advise against her.

Yi Nan advised gently: “Sister Lie Yan, although those people are your father’s subordinates, they are unworthy to be led by him. These people, other than a select few, have no loyalty at all. The only thing you will get from fighting together with these people is betrayal. You don’t have to be in a hurry creating the chivalrous bandit group, and it doesn’t need to have many people. If you can gather ten elites, it would be better than a thousand weak skeletons or millions of traitors! Right now, we shouldn’t be anxiously looking for people to establish the chivalrous bandit group. Instead, we should be training to get stronger. With your strength, you can establish the group any time.”

The female giant muttered to herself for a while: “But, Lao San and the others are still here. They are very loyal, it’s not possible for this grandpa to abandon them.”

Yue Yang smiled slowly: “Actually we are not trying to interfere with your plan of re-establishing your group. Maybe they are at Rainbow City. Even if they are not there, you can also ask them to gather at Rainbow City. I respect your suggestion, but it is very difficult to make that happen, because we have very different ideals.”

Yi Nan patted Yue Yang a little, trying to hint to him to not reject her too directly, so as to not hurt the female giant’s feelings.

She felt that the female giant didn't have it easy.

She had been trying to realise her father's will all by herself and becoming the pillar of the chivalrous bandit group... She was just like Madam Fu Xing last time, who supported the Hundred Flowers Valley all by herself.

The only different thing was that her aunt never asked for anything from her. She only wished for her to grow up well. This was because growing up well was Madam Fu Xing's most important priority. At that time, even without anyone giving her pressure, Yi Nan definitely felt a lot of pressure. Leader Lie Yan who had to inherit her father's will to revive the Raging Flame Chivalrous Bandit Group and led a few thousand people, really had it worse than her!

With regards to Yue Yang rejecting her invitation, the female giant had already expected it.

However, she still felt sad about it.

It was the first time that she felt helpless and alone. No one was willing to help her, no one was willing to support her.

The female giant felt some kind of unspeakable sadness and disappointment, but she pretended to be strong. She pretended not to care and forced a happy smile: "Everyone has different ideals, this is normal. No matter if you guys wants to join the Raging Flame Chivalrous Bandit Group, this grandpa still thinks that you are my friends, my best friends! When we reached the Rainbow City, this grandpa will give you the best marriage ceremony!"

"No need, actually, we secretly left home and planned to return after a few days." Yi Nan stuck out her tongue naughtily and smiled apologizing to the female giant: "I shall accept Sister Lie Yan's good intentions, but we would still require our parents blessings for a big event such as a marriage. We were just joking previously!"

“Are you guys leaving tomorrow?” The female giant was shocked and quickly looked towards Yue Yang.

“Something seemed to have happened in my hometown. I’m a bit worried so I’d like to go back to check on the situation. I will go to Rainbow City later.”

Yue Yang didn’t plan to go back to the Tong Tian Tower initially, but he received a message sent through the Three Colors Map by Hai Ying Wu in the grimoire world: “Thousand Goblin King’s substitute body seems to be moving.” If it was something else, Yue Yang wouldn’t care about it too much. However, this concerned the Thousand Goblin King, so he had to return for a while before coming back to Heaven Realm. As for accompanying Yi Nan to Rainbow City to play, he could only promise to take her next time.

Yi Nan was also not the kind of girl who didn’t know which issue was more important. Naturally, she could understand.

Of course, the matter of rejecting Lie Yan’s chivalrous bandit group was unrelated to returning to Tong Tian Tower. It was purely because Yue Yang and Yi Nan didn’t approve of the female giant’s ideals.

They didn’t mean that such ideals that upheld justice wasn’t good. It was just that if they were to live in the Heaven Realm with such ideals, it would be very difficult. Furthermore, it wasn’t easy to nurture people and it would inconvenient to carry extra burden. Not every single men had unyielding characters and not everyone were warriors that would think of dying as going home. Hence, using the female giant’s ideals to create a group would only breed more traitors and failures... Yue Yang and Yi Nan also knew that rejecting the female giant would make her sad, but they understand that rejecting her would be better than lying to her and giving her false hope!

“Turns out it’s like that, I understand.” The female giant still thought that Yue Yang was using this as an excuse to reject her,

and she became sadder. She forced herself to smile and nodded: “If you and little sister get married, you must invite this grandpa. Ah, invite this group leader to your wedding banquet.”

“We definitely will, but Sister Lie Yan would probably need to wait a long time.” Yi Nan tapped Yue Yang with her hands, gesturing that he should comfort her with a few words.

“It’s getting late, everyone should go to rest early!” Yue Yang knew that he wouldn’t be able to convince the female giant by being soft. He had to become the bad person until the end. With Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian’s advise and Yi Nan as the mediator, with time, he should be able to make her surrender.

This kind of thing couldn’t be rushed.

He should let her try on her own and fail. Without hitting a wall, she would probably not give up.

The female giant’s lips trembled a little, as if she wanted to say something. In the end, she didn’t say anything, she only raised her hands a little and said goodbye to Yue Yang and Yi Nan.

When Yue Yang and Yi Nan returned into the grimoire world, she strongly patted the Ancient Island Whale, telling it to stop. She whistled to the sky, then, just like lightning flashing through the night sky, her lone figure flew away... She now knew that she was wrong, and she knew that what Yue Yang and Yi Nan said was right. However, she still couldn’t convince herself to let go of her ideals currently. After all, that was the will that her father had entrusted to her, and the ideal that she had persevered in all this time.

She wanted Yue Yang to advise her a little more, maybe she would feel better then.

However, this brat didn’t say anything...

He didn’t even said goodbye.

So infuriating!

Even if what he said was right, he shouldn't reject her continuously like this. He was really too much.

The female giant who never cried for others before suddenly felt like crying, her eyes felt hot.

Tong Tian Tower, Soaring Dragon Continent.

In Yue Clan Castle, in the Martial Art Training Public Square, Yue Shan, who would usually sit on the chair like a dried leaf, suddenly went out to take a walk. Yue Shan's pale face looked extremely haggard, devoid of any vitality. However, even though his cheeks were sunken, his eyes were still bright, like an undying fire in the dark. With this clear and bright eyes, other than looking sickly, he also looked wise and farsighted, which was not usually seen in him.

He looked more like a student walking under the sun, amidst the morning dew, not like a bed-ridden sickly old man.

Seeing him walking out in the morning, the various family members of the Yue Clan were a little surprised.

A few people quickly came to wait upon him, afraid that Yue Shan's body would collapse with a single gush of wind. However, Yue Shan smiled slightly and waved his hands, telling the others not to pay attention to him, he only like to walk by himself.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others had already attained the Innate Realm, and were quietly cultivating with the old fox, the Heavenly Royal Guards and the others in the great hall.

Today, only Liu Ye, the golden elf Bao'er and the others were training here.

They knew about Yue Shan's past, but due to his performance during the Underground Base, they all thought that Yue Shan was a good father and forgave him for his past. Furthermore, Yue Shan was also heavily injured because he was protecting Soaring Dragon Continent from the Black Hell Army's invasion. When they saw

Yue Shan walking out, they bowed to him in respect as a senior and also gave way to him.

“Good, good. You guys continue to train!” Yue Shan very rarely greeted them normally. Maybe he was in a good mood.

“Do you want me to call Sister Yue Yu to accompany you?” Liu Ye kindheartedly asked.

“No, let her rest a while, I just want to walk by myself.” Yue Shan waved his hand lightly, then suddenly turned around and asked Liu Ye: “Liu Ye, is your teacher’s name Mr. Zhi Ge? Speaking of that, Zhi Ge and I were classmates in the past. 20 years ago, I was an exchange student sent to Tian Luo Institute. At that time, I was classmates with Mr. Zhi Ge.”

“Mr. Zhi Ge? I don’t think I’ve heard that name before. Liu Ye’s master was Master An Ning.” Liu Ye was baffled, why did Yue Shan said that his master was Mr. Zhi Ge?

“Ah, my bad, I must have remembered wrongly. I don’t know Master An Ning, but Mr. Zhi Ge’s wife seemed to be called Ning Ke Er. Last time, I had fought together with Mr. Zhi Ge and his wife against the demon race. We were both in the same boat, we lived or died together. After that, we forged a deep friendship. Sigh, my memories has become hazy with age!” Yue Shan shook his hands, gesturing that it was nothing and left.

“Great clan master, can you tell us more about the past?” Liu Ye felt that his retreating, lonely back was quite pitiful. She caught up with him and decided to chat with him a while more.

“Actually there was not much to say, it was all in the past.” When Yue Shan saw Liu Ye’s concerned expression, he nodded and gestured for her to sit down. He sat on the other piece of rock and started to reminiscent, “It was quite an old story. I remembered at that time, it was you... it was the day you and Yue Yu were born into the world... We were ambushed by the demon race, and there were no one to help us. Father knew it was the demon races’

scheme to wage a war, so he would rather see me, the eldest son of the Yue Clan to die than to ask the emperor for help.

In reality, at that time, there were no more soldiers to be deployed. Even the maids and servants from the palace and Yue Clan Castle had already been deployed to fight. There were only the old, weak, women and children... It was almost certain that we had to die. We were just waiting for the next wave of the demon legion, thinking of surviving long enough to kill a few more demons! Of course, we were also hoping for Third Brother to return. At that time, Third Brother was still very young, and his powers were very strong. Third and Fourth Brother went to the front lines without father's knowledge.

We were in a difficult situation, and we were hoping for a miracle. After all, everyone didn't really wish to die... Then, your sister Yue Yu was born. At that time, the sky changed colour and rain started to pour from the sky. A golden light descended from the sky and purified the bloody battlefield... Even the grass below the corpses became greener, and flowers that had withered bloomed once again. The demon race became panicked, and our forces' morale was boosted. We charged forward with all of our strength, and in the end, with much difficulties, we reunited with third and fourth brother, who were covered with cuts and bruises all over their bodies, and we escaped back together.

It could be said that, cough cough cough... it was your sister Yue Yu's birth that saved us all!"

(Last: Sister here does not mean blood-related sister)

"Sister Yu is really amazing! No wonder she is peaceful by nature, turns out that that kind of miracle happened before!" Liu Ye praised with utmost admiration.

"You are also good, you are a good child!" Yue Shan nodded with a smile.

"Great clan master, tell us another story tomorrow!" Liu Ye

listened to Yue Shan because she pitied the lonely Yue Shan, but Bao'er was addicted to his stories. She asked Yue Shan to continue telling them stories tomorrow.

“Tomorrow... I might be a little busy. Let's talk again when there's a chance. You are both good children, you must continue to work hard and continue to be happy!” Yue Shan raised his head and looked to the sky. The sun was rising from the east. He got up and slowly walked away. Drops of golden light scattered all over his figure. After walking for some distance, he suddenly turned around, smiled sincerely and waved towards Liu Ye: “Liu Ye, please pass my greetings to Master Ling! Goodbye!”

“Yeah, goodbye!” Liu Ye nodded obediently.

A flash of confusement appeared in her thoughts. Could it be that Yue Shan really knew her master? However, this thought shortly disappeared. Forget it, it was not that important!



# Chapter 627 – True Selflessness, Grasp Heart

---

Soaring Dragon Continent, Forgotten Sorrow Valley.

Amidst countless sword shaped rock formations, there was a draped figure, standing silently.

He was very patient and did not move at all for three whole hours. To him, time was the most meaningless thing in the world. If patience could be measured in terms of wealth, he was like a billionaire that did not lack money at all. The Black Hell King was hiding in secret while observing the figure for three hours. After determining that there was no danger, he floated up and cautiously landed a thousand meters away from the figure.

“Black Hell, you have changed.” The figure evaluated Black Hell King.

“Who are you?” Black Hell King was slightly bewildered. He did not recognize the man, but the man was able to recognize him. Moreover, the man seemed to be familiar with him.

Black Hell King hated this kind of feeling. He hated people that he could not see through like that brat Yue Yang. Because Yue Yang rose in power and Black Hell King was not able to eliminate him, Yue Yang became a fishbone that was stuck in his throat. Not moving up nor down, giving him an unbearable feeling.....

Now, there was another figure that gave him the same sense of uneasiness.

If it was someone else who sent the letter, he would never turn up for the appointment.

He did not want to allow Sky Execution to find a chance to attack him. In order to level up and enter Heaven Realm, Sky Execution was already prepared to kill him to sharpen his power and level up. Black Hell King would absolutely not give him this chance. Before

everything happened, he did not fear Sky Execution at all, but his body had not yet fully recovered, as a result he did things cautiously.

However, the letter was too strange. It contained confidential information about him, so he had no choice but to come.

The figure did not answer him. He had his back to Black Hell King and did not turn around. He said: “Do you know why I had asked you to meet with me? It is because I want to see if you have any value..... Black Hell, you disappoint me very much. When you came back from the failure in the Death Arena, you have already lost your guts against Yue Yang. Even meeting with me had put you on the edge; you are sneaking around like a little girl! You have already lost the ability to fight against him. It is impossible now, and even more impossible in the future. You have already lost your worth!”

Black Hell King became even more suspicious when he felt the familiarity in the figure’s voice.

He became more vigilant and sneered: “Who do you think you are? If you have the ability to kill, why waste words? Other than Zhi Zun, not even Yue Yang can think about killing me!”

The figure did not deny him. On the contrary, he admitted it: “That is true. The [Betrayal] Inherent Skill is very practical, but it also has a fatal weakness.”

“Weakness?” The Black Hell King knew of his own inherent skill’s weakness, but he never imagined that others knew about it.

Even if they knew, they would not be able to take advantage of it.

If it was exploitable, Yue Clan Third Young Master would have already used it, why wait until now? This was the reason came to this meeting. The other big reason was because he was sure that he could safely leave this place alive. With his [Betrayal] Inherent Skill, no one could kill him other than the Prison Emperor or Zhi

Zun, and that was only if she wielded any of the Prison Emperor's Divine Weapons. Not even Yue Yang with his Nirvana Flames and World Exterminating Wheel could kill him!

The figure lightly brushed his hands in the air.

With extremely graceful movements, a Divine Grimoire floated out, releasing a brilliant splendor.....

The Black Hell King's heart skipped a beat. His Heaven Ranker's intuition alerted him of how dangerous the person in front of him was. The strangest thing was that the person in front of him did not release any killing intent at all. Black Hell King was extremely puzzled about this. Could it be that the figure was only showing off?

“Your [Betrayal] Inherent Skill was mutated, so you should understand that inherent skills could change. Levelling the inherent skill is also a type of change, but it is not a qualitative change. When a warrior's body, ideals, energy and level completely change, then the inherent skill could also change, just like what happened to you.” The figure slowly raised its right hand. The hand looked young and powerful with five slender fingers. It was full of vitality and desire. The figure did not turn around and only pointed at the Black Hell King with his finger: “You might not know what my inherent skill is but I shall tell you. My inherent skill is [Mutation]! With my inherent skill, I could mutate any person, any object, any life, any energy and even any inherent skill.”

“What?” The Black Hell King finally understood what the other party meant. This figure could use its inherent skill to change his [Betrayal] Inherent Skill.

“From now on, your body and inherent skill has a 50% chance to change for the better or for the worse.” A silver light shot out from the figure's forefinger and quickly hit the area between Black Hell King's brows.

Black Hell King's heart shuddered.

He could not believe in his own reaction. He had already prepared himself for all kind of scenarios previously. How could he not find a way to escape at all?

What was the reason for this? Was it because the enemy was too strong? No! It was not like that.....was it because of the enemy's artifacts? Special ability or domain? No, that was not it..... It was all a deception, an open deception. The opponent did not have any killing intent in his actions, thus he was able to deceive his own instincts, fooling his subconscious. Moreover, the silver light that shot out from his inherent skill was way too fast for him to react.

In other words, he was deceived by the simplest of skill.

Under the condition of being impossible to be deceived, he was easily deceived by his opponent..... The Black Hell King's complexion darkened and filled with killing intent.

“Your body has weakened, but your inherent skill has become stronger. It can be a good thing, it can be a bad thing. Haha, I wish you good luck.” The figure waved its hand and prepared to disappear.

“Hold on, who are you?” Black Hell King was determined to kill this mysterious figure.

“Actually, I have no need to tell you, because you are close to dying. Telling you would only be a waste of words. But, I want to see the surprise in your expression. Do you want to know who I am? Come, I will let you see.....” The figure suddenly appeared in front of the Black Hell King. His face was barely three inches away from him.

“Huh, it's you? No, you are not him. Oh my god, it is, it is really you!” Black Hell King looked like he had seen a ghost, as his face was filled with fear.

“You have guessed right. It is me!” The figure spoke with a

relaxed tone. The Black Hell King's face was full of sweat, and his hands trembled.

“You, you, you should be finding Yue Yang, not me!” The Black Hell King clenched his fists.

“I will definitely go look for him, but I don't have any guarantee that I can kill him yet. He is actually very strong and very cunning. Killing him is currently impossible for me, so I am using you and the Thousand Goblin King to cause some trouble for him, helping me to earn some more time. I am the same with that brat, we both needed more time. Black Hell, I originally admired your intelligence. It is very unfortunate that you had been scared witless by the Prison Emperor and also by Yue Yang. It is impossible for a person to have infinite chances. I can let you go, but I believe that many others would not agree. Black Hell, stay well.” The figure patted Black Hell King's shoulders as if saying goodbye to an old friend, and disappeared into thin air.

“.....” Black Hell King became extremely quiet and then hatefully muttered: “Why? Why am I always below others?”

“That is because you do not suit being above others.”

A man, whose entire body was flickering with purple lightning, appeared from the distant sky and walked down, step by step.

The man appeared soldierly yet pretty. He had black hair that stood up like sharp blades. His eyes were as deep as black holes devoid of any human emotion, like the eyes of a death god that could suck the soul. He wore a reduced shirt, the sleeves were just the right length but his shirt was halved, showing his perfect abs.

He wore black pants embroidered with two silver dragons.

This type of silver dragon was a huge dragon that had wings and both of them were Divine Dragons of the Eastern Goblin Tribe.

The most eye-catching thing was the strange weapon on his waist. The weapon was covered in purple cloth. Its shape was like a

blade yet not a blade, a sword yet not a sword.

Just by his appearance, most people in the Tong Tian Tower wouldn't have recognized him. However, everyone knew his name. He was the number one ranked Sky Demon, the leader of the Demonic Palace that not even Sky Law, who was an Elder Innate, could surpass. He was Sky Execution!

"It is you!" Black Hell King nodded his head: "In the entire Tong Tian Tower, only you would be in a hurry to kill me."

"That's right. I will not allow Yue Yang to find the chance to kill you..... If he killed you, there would not be any benefit for me, it would only decrease my chances of leveling up. Other than being a Heaven Ranker, he had already caught up to me in all other aspects. I will absolutely not allow him to surpass me. The number one position in the Demonic Palace belongs to me. Sky Wolf might be destined to surpass me in the future, but not today." Sky Execution walked towards the Black Hell King and coldly stared at him: "It is time to say your last words. I promise to kill you before Yue Yang arrives!"

"You..... It seems that you have obtained enlightenment to the Innate Elder Realm. No wonder you are so sure to kill me." Black Hell King's gaze grew cold and nodded: "If I had gained the same enlightenment in the past, the one to die would be you. So unfortunate."

"If I wasn't so stupid, so trusting on my comrades in the past, I wouldn't have lived up to this day." The old Dragon Turtle had also arrived, wielding the Prison Emperor Divine Staff in his hands. He had changed his appearance to an old man that looked withered and senile. However, compared to when he met Yue Yang, his weak state seemed to have turned for the better. The reason why he was able to regain his strength was probably due to the Prison Emperor Divine Staff. Even if he was not at his peak strength, he would be able to fight equally against the Black Hell King thanks to the Prison Emperor Divine Staff.

“Yuan Long, you are too late.” Black Hell King did not find it strange for the old Dragon Turtle to show up.

“No problem. Whether it is Sky Execution, Yue Yang or me who kills you, the results will be the same.” The old Dragon Turtle spoke indifferently: “As long as you die, I would be indifferent towards the process.”

“Unfortunately, the third young master is not here; Otherwise, I would have picked one of you to send me off.” The Black Hell King suddenly laughed.

“Since the third young master is not here, how about letting me send you off?”

Yue Shan’s voice suddenly echoed at the foot of the mountain. Black Hell King immediately reacted when he heard it.

His face became extremely ugly.

Elder Nan Gong supported the weakened Yue Shan and flew to the summit. He lightly placed Yue Shan down: “This is the only thing I can do for you. Are you sure you want to do this?”

The one Elder Nan Gong asked was naturally Yue Shan. Yue Shan respectfully bowed, “Elder Nan Gong, thank you very much. This is my choice. I have no regrets.” He turned around and smiled at the Black Hell King while cupping his hands: “Black Hell King, this is the first time I have met you. But, that doesn’t matter. I think that we are fine as acquaintances. Otherwise, you would not have chosen me as your substitute! The reason I came here is nothing much, I just wanted to give you this body..... The [Betrayal] Inherent Skill can betray anything, but it shouldn’t be able to betray an offering..... An offering is selfless. You can only betray others or even yourself, but you cannot betray true selflessness.”

Black Hell King wanted to kill Yue Shan instantly, but he did not move.

In the end, he slowly opened his mouth and asked: “You really

want to do this? What will you gain from this? Do you think that Yue Yang will be grateful to you? That is unlikely, you would never be able to change his impression of you, because you were never a good person. Stop deceiving yourself. Your ambitions are not inferior to mine. Your unwillingness is also not inferior to mine..... Why don't we work together? Yue Shan, as long as you are willing, we can start anew. As long as we could manage our bodies properly and live till the end, defeating Yue Yang is not impossible!"

Yue Shan replied: "If I was not a father, I might have agreed. You are not the father of a child so you would never understand the meaning in my actions."

He pulled out a dagger and deeply pierced his chest.

He opened the wound, showing his warm innards. Fresh blood splattered out like rain in the sky..... Yue Shan smiled as if he did not feel any pain. He cut out his heart and held it in his palm. Then, he exhausted all of his strength to say one last thing: "This is for you!"

Black Hell King painfully closed his eyes.

On the other hand, Yue Shan maintained his posture until the mountain winds grew stronger, blowing him. Only then did he fall down towards the deep ravine.

"By the order of Sky Execution, judge all evil, Grasp Heart!" Sky Execution raised his right hand and slowly clenched it.

The heart in Yue Shan's hand and the beating heart in Black Hell King's chest shattered at the same time.....The [Betrayal] Inherent Skill lost its effect due to Yue Shan's sacrifice. Black Hell King spoke while blood was coming out of his mouth: "[Mutation] Inherent Skill. So it was like this. He was the one who killed me, not you guys, it was him....."

Black Hell King wiped the blood that was coming out of his



mouth.

His entire body surged with strength and instantly leveled up to Elder Innate Level 2.

He waved his hand and revealed the Dark Divine Armor. He raised the Dark Divine Sword and pointed it at Sky Execution: “Since its like this, let us have a final match, Sky Execution! Let me see whether your strength is superior to mine!”

Elder Nan Gong did not watch the decisive battle. He floated down and carried Yue Shan, who died with a victorious smile on his face. Nodding, he said: “The true victor is you!”

## Chapter 628 – A terrifying guess

---

Yue Shan died in battle.

Yue Yang had just returned from the Heaven Realm, and he heard this news.

When he returned to the Tian Luo Palace where Fourth Mother was staying, he realised that Fourth Mother was not around. The Drunken Cat Big Sis who was still training to upgrade her skills told him this news and asked him to comfort Fourth Mother. When Fourth Mother heard that Yue Shan died, she was extremely saddened and already went back to the Yue Clan Castle to accompany Yue Yu. When Yue Yang returned to the Yue Clan Castle, before he even met Fourth Mother, he realised that Jun Wu You and the old fox had come. Even Elder Nan Gong and the old Dragon Turtle who rarely made appearance had come and were waiting for him.

Elder Nan Gong didn't say much, he simply once again explained that Yue Shan had sacrificed his life to stop the [Betrayal] Inherent Skill, allowing Sky Execution to kill the Black Hell King.

In front of the group of warriors, Elder Nan Gong naturally didn't say that Yue Shan was actually the Black Hell King's body double.

But Yue Yang understood the moment he heard it.

If he wasn't Black Hell King's body double, Yue Shan would never be able to remove the Black Hell King's [Betrayal] Inherent Skill no matter how much sacrifice he offered. Actually, he had already been suspicious about it from the beginning, but because Yue Shan did not make any unusual moves, Yue Yang pretended to not know. He never imagined the Yue Shan would be so admirable as to sacrifice his own life to eliminate the Black Hell King. This heroic feat truly surprised Yue Yang.

However, Yue Yang was suspicious about one thing, even if Yue Shan had sacrificed himself, there was no guarantee that it would be enough to force Black Hell King to death.

If Sky Execution was able to kill Black Hell King now, why were both him and the Dragon Emperor unable to kill him earlier on? Was it really that easy to kill the Black Hell King with only Yue Shan's cooperation?

This was something only a few people would be suspicious about, so Yue Yang had pondered for a long time.

He thought that there must be some other inside information.

Yue Yang would never believe that Yue Shan and Sky Execution alone could kill the Black Hell King. He believed that there was someone in the background who messed with the Black Hell King.

But who was it? The Thousand Goblin King's doppelganger? This was not probable. The Thousand Goblin King's doppelganger could not even protect itself, so it had no power to influence the Black Hell King. The Scarlet Emperor? YueYang had his suspicions, but the Scarlet Emperor was banished by Zhi Zun, forcing him to escape to Heaven Realm. It was impossible for him to stay in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Moreover, the most important thing for the Scarlet Emperor to do now was to recover..... There was one more person that Yue Yang was very suspicious about. That person was the vessel of the Ancient Demon King's soul! Yue Yang had already suspected that this vessel was someone inside the Yue Clan Castle or someone, who was very good at hiding, in Da Xia. Unfortunately he had no way to confirm this.

If the the vessel of the Ancient Demon King's soul had encountered the Black Hell King before Sky Execution and Yue Shan worked together, then it was possible to successfully kill him.

Yue Yang had confidence in this deduction.

“There was a mysterious figure draped with a cloak there, but we

were unable to clearly see that person's face. Mr. Nan Gong and I guessed that it was extremely likely to be that person. You must take care of yourself in the future.” The old Dragon Turtle quietly told Yue Yang. when Yue Yang heard it, his body shook. It was the same as what he had guessed..... The old Dragon Turtle patted Yue Yang's shoulder and then passed the Prison Emperor Divine Staff to him. He lightly sighed: “The Black Hell King is now dead. My dream has been fulfilled. I have nothing to worry about anymore.”

“Don't forget that there's still the Scarlet Emperor. That bastard is still alive!” Yue Yang was afraid that this old Dragon Turtle would commit suicide, so he immediately tried to stop him.

“The Scarlet Emperor is yours. I am already too old. I can't fight anymore.”

The old Dragon Turtle laughed.

Actually, the old Dragon Turtle accepted Jun Wu You's suggestion.

Jun Wu You and the old fox had already discussed about it. They were prepared to dig up an area near the Yue Clan Castle and create a man-made lake to build a Divine Dragon Underground Palace, letting the old Turtle Dragon to live in seclusion. The first reason was because they respected the old Turtle Dragon and wanted to enshrine him as a Divine Beast that would protect the Soaring Dragon Continent. The second reason was because of Yue Yang. When Yue Yang's bad temper flares up, they could ask him to intervene. After all, the old Dragon Turtle had previously accompanied the Prison Emperor, so his word carried a lot of weight.

Another extra reason was because Yue Yang had brought a few hundred Heaven Realm Draconian from the Wyvern Valley over here.

Those women were not willing to return to the Heaven Realm, unless Yue Yang would lead them to war. If they were to join any

single country in the Soaring Dragon Continent, they could heavily influence the balance of power, and this might even influence the entire Tong Tian Tower. Jun Wu You and the others had already discussed this. They decided to give them a neutral territory, build a Divine Dragon Palace, and treat it as Yue Yang's temporary residence.

This way, they would not be able to leave Yue Yang and not be able to establish contact with any of the powers.

This reason caused the emergence of the plans to build the Divine Dragon Underground Palace and the Divine Dragon Palace.

With the Divine Dragon Palace, no matter what different races Yue Yang would bring back from the Heaven Realm, they would be able to stay in this neutral zone. The Divine Dragon Palace's power would could not be controlled by anyone nor restricted by anyone, everybody would be satisfied..

“We wanted Senior Yuan Long to rest! It's like this.....” Jun Wu You immediately found an excuse to settle the dispute and whispered to Yue Yang.

“Dig a man-made lake? Build an underground palace and a palace?” Yue Yang felt that creating a man-made lake close to the Yue Clan Palace was a pain in the ass move. There were so many lakes and seas in the world, why did they want to create a man-made lake close to a mountainous area like the Yue Clan Castle's vicinity? In other words, they were afraid that Yue Yang would not return to the Soaring Dragon Continent after going to the Heaven Realm, so they would build him a house. At the same time, they would have the old Dragon Turtle seize the opportunity to educate him, preaching how a Prison Emperor should be! Yue Yang was very clever as he had seen through Jun Wu You and the other's plans. He bluntly clapped his hands: “Since it's like this, then let us make it a bit bigger. I have met a bigger old turtle in Heaven Realm. We would probably need a bigger lake to contain it. How big? That thing is an Ancient Island Whale, it is ten times bigger

than a normal whale, tell me how big it is?”

“Pffff!” When the old Dragon Turtle heard about it, he spat out the tea in his mouth.

“Cough, cough!” Jun Wu You and the old fox kept on coughing.

They knew that Yue Yang, this abnormal brat, would not return empty handed from Heaven Realm.

However, they could never have imagined that in just a few days, he would bring back an Ancient Island Whale. With his current speed, Heaven Realm would probably be empty sooner or later, while the Soaring Dragon Continent would be filled with creatures from Heaven Realm.

In the end, Jun Wu You gave an edict.

He decided to increase the size of the man-made lake by a hundred times..... In any case, the war between the Soaring Dragon Continent and the Demon Abyss was in a ceasefire. Every country had amassed a huge amount of soldiers, turning them into a construction force to build the Divine Dragon Palace and the Divine Dragon Underground Palace was the optimal way to transform the military force. Moreover, this could help unite the city lords. Whether it was those who betrayed, those who were selfish, those who were loyal, all of them would definitely agree to devote a bit of power to conduct this impressive feat..... What's more, as long as they had money, the Soaring Dragon Continent would not fear that there was no one who would work. Even if they did not have enough manpower, they could reach out to other continents of the Tong Tian Tower.

It needs to be known that once the Ocean Empress of the Tong Tian Tower's Sea Clan hears about constructing Yue Yang a Divine Dragon palace and Underground Palace, she would not say anything further and immediately dispatch 30,000 people to help. The Underworld Emperor would not be slower than her one bit, same with the Eastern Goblin Tribe, Golden Elf Tribe and others.

As long as Yue Yang agreed, everything could be done.

They were only afraid that he would be stubborn and disagree.

Jun Wu You had originally planned to have her daughter enter the ring to win against Yue Yang's stubbornness. But now, it seems that there was no need to do it. It would be bad to piss off Yue Yang, but he was normally easy to talk to.

Before Elder Nan Gong took his leave, he shot Yue Yang a glance and nodded his head. Yue Yang naturally knew what this meant. It meant that Yue Yang should be careful when he meets any kind of situation.

Those hidden enemies were definitely hiding trump cards. He should never rush into them; Otherwise, he might fall into a trap.

Seeing Elder Nan Gong's actions, Yue Yang fell into deep thought.

He had slightly guess the identity of the mysterious figure.....

If his guess was true, then it was a bit thorny. He must be extremely careful in responding to the enemy. If he made a mistake, he could easily suffer losses.

The old fox placed his arm around Yue Yang's shoulder and whispered: "You don't need to be worried about the old marshall. He already understood about Yue Shan's wish. Moreover, Yue Shan's actions were seeking repentance. Although the old marshall was very sorrowful, he changed his attitude for his son. The thing that we are most afraid of is the other person. It would be best if we don't inform him of this. We are afraid that he might not be able to hold back."

"Understood." Actually, Yue Yang actually felt a bit restless. If that person was truly the Ancient Demon King's vessel, it would be extremely thorny.

"You have arrived, take a seat!" Elder Yue Hai sat in front of Yue Shan's coffin. He quietly sat there. When Yue Yang arrived, he

noded his head and indicated that he should take a seat: “Xiao San, accompany your grandfather and drink!”

Yue Yang approached and took the cup of wine that was offered to him by fifth grandfather. He paid his respects to Elder Yue Hai and drank the wine in one gulp.

He drank three cups in succession.

It was only then did Elder Yue Hai stop and nodded his head: “I represent Ah Shan for these three cups. I knew that he had been in an unpleasant mood in these few years. He was smart and diligent. His Innate Skill was not bad, but he had received a heavy pressure from the outside every since he was small. From small, he was surpassed by your father. He felt ashamed as the big brother. When your father left, you had suddenly rose in power when he had just received the position of clan head for a few years. Moreover, you had surpassed your father by hundred of times..... Ah Shan is someone who desired power and carried ambitions. My eyes are not blind to not see it. I watched him grow up knowing what kind of person he was. I had originally planned to pass down the position of clan head to him. He would definitely be a better clan head than your father. But, everyone did not think like this. Everyone thought the more powerful one was, the more they fitted the position of clan head..... Under this pressure, Ah Shan changed and did many things. He was even used by bad people almost to the point of no return.”

Yue Yang immediately comforted the lonely old man: “Uncle already cleansed his error with his blood. He was a good person worthy of being called a son of the Yue Clan.”

Yue Hai nodded his head: “Your grandfather thanks you. Without you, Ah Shan might have sunk even deeper to the point of no return. He might not even be able to become a praised hero! It was you who gave him this chance, you who gave him the chance to become a hero. Xiao San, there are many things in the past that you didn’t know about. Seeking about the truth too much would



hurt many people. Do you understand what I am saying?”

“If..... that person appears, what should we do?” Although he was warned repeatedly by the old fox, he still could not help saying it.

“I had actually thought about it. The body was his, but the soul is of the Demon King. What is the point of existing? Xiao San, you are a good child. Your grandfather will now tell you a few words. There are somethings that your grandfather could not personally do. I hope that you would bring out courage to turn around the mistakes and free him!”

When Elder Yue Hai said this, he looked at Yue Yang with great seriousness: “I believe that this is also your father’s greatest wish.”

Fifth grandfather comforted Elder Yue Hai on one said and said: “Brother Hai, it might not be necessary. There might be another method. Let Xiao San think about it!”

Elder Yue Hai raised his arm and stopped fifth grandfather’s words. He once again looked at Yue Yang with a serious expression. He whispered hoarsely, but the words were filled with power: “Remember. If it is truly him, there is no need to worry. Quickly kill him. This is your grandfather’s only wish.”

## Chapter 629 – Who could control fate?

---

When Yue Yang met Yue Yu, he found that she had turned into a watering pot from all her crying. She was sobbing as she lay on Fourth Mother's embrace.

Liu Ye and Bao Er were all present, silently shedding their tears.

Even the naughty little girl Yue Shuang was obediently sitting on Yue Bing's lap and did not make a sound. Her big eyes focused on one thing then another, she was unable to comprehend the meaning of death.

Seeing that everyone was crying, she also cried.

However, she had gotten tired from crying, and she still didn't understand why everyone was crying.

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others sat silently on the ground. They wanted to offer their consolation but did not know what to say. Hence, they could only sit on the ground silently.

When Yue Yang saw them, he was rather surprised. He never thought that in just a few days of training, all of them would actually reach the Innate Realm. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Prince of Tian Luo even almost reached Innate Level 2. Xue Tan Lang was the fastest, he was already Innate Level 2. Without Yue Yang teaching them, they were all able to reach the Innate Realm. Yue Yang was very surprised at this. Seems like natural aptitudes and bloodline were just some factors, learning through experience and power of understanding were more important... No matter what, since Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others had overcome this hurdle, their future cultivation would be much easier.

Yue Yang had a feeling that humans reaching the Innate Realm was even more difficult than Earth Rankers in the Heaven Realm to reach the Heaven Rank.

Reaching the Innate Realm was like entering the main door of a

Palace Hall. If one was unable to cross the doorstep, they would not be able to gain a revelation.

The moment they become Innates, it would be easier for them to improve in the future...

If Yue Shan hadn't just died in battle and if Yue Yang weren't rushing to console Yue Yu, Yue Yang would have given some pointers to Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others to help them improve to the next level.

"Big brother Xiao San!" Yue Shuang had good eyes as she was able to see Yue Yang outside the door. She immediately jumped out of her sister's arms and bounded towards him. Jumping into Yue Yang's arms, her eyes turned a little red and she pouted her mouth, as if she was about to cry. Today was really not easy for her, trying to become an obedient child for the whole day. Everyone was crying, making her so uncomfortable that she dare not break the atmosphere. She even thought that she had made some kind of mistake.

"Don't cry, Shuang'er is a good girl!" Yue Yang wiped away the tears in the little girl's face and kissed away the tears that were about to come out from her eyes.

"En!" The little girl was weak to Yue Yang's praises. She would feel proud of herself when he praised her and would immediately smile.

Yue Yu looked up and saw that Yue Yang had returned.

Immediately, sadness rushed back to her. She struggled free from Fourth Mother's arms and jumped into Yue Yang's, hugging her little brother tightly as she cried out loud. Her father was gone, she only had her little brother to be her support now. Actually, she did not need much to be satisfied with her life. As long as her father was healthy and her little brother continued to grow stronger, she had no other wishes. However, reality was harsh. Her father, who had betrayed his clan previously, before obtaining forgiveness of

his clan members, had died together with the Black Hell King...

Right now, she only had her little brother.

Liu Ye also wiped away her tears and mumbled: “He was still telling me stories in the morning, how could he die in the afternoon!”

Fourth Mother stood up and hugged both Yue Yu and Yue Yang. She was unable to comfort both of them with words, but she wanted to tell them that although she wasn’t strong enough, she would always be there for them when they needed her.

First uncle and third uncle had died in battle, even her husband was killed by someone. However, the family still had her...

As long as she was still around, they would still be a family!

“Second sister, don’t be sad. That was first uncle’s choice. This battle will happen sooner or later, we don’t have a choice in this matter. Furthermore, it doesn’t matter if we are strong or weak, our enemies will still come to fight us. What we can do now is to wipe away our tears and continue our older generation’s mission. Let’s continue on and carve our own road with our strength!” Yue Yang wiped away Yue Yu’s tear-stained face, his heart feeling especially painful looking at her tear-stricken face.

Destiny wouldn’t reduce her sufferings just because she was kind.

In reality, as long as they were born in the Yue Clan, born in the middle of the whirlpool of battle, they would not be able to break away from this destiny.

At first, Yue Yang did not understand why a trifling clan like the Yue Clan would have so much schemes and conspiracies, would face so many battles...

Actually, it was not because he was other worlder.

It started much earlier, fifteen years ago, when Yue Qiu died. Or even hundreds of years earlier, when the Ghost Genius Yue Gong

revived the Yue Clan with his puppets. Or even thousands of years earlier, when the Yue Clan was first established by the first Clan Master of the Yue Clan... From then on, they were fated for this destiny. The whole of Yue Clan history was made from battles with enemies from different generations. No one was able to avoid being involved in these battles, the only difference was the extent of their involvement.

If one were to trace the source even further into history, it may even be further than Thorny Flower Fairy's era three thousand years ago, Prison Emperor's era six thousand years ago, or Empress Fei Wen Li's era ten thousands of years ago. Even further ago, through the history of countless warriors, destiny had formed through this continuous, seemingly unpredictable, rhythm of fate.

No one was able to avoid this fate.

Unless there was someone who was capable of controlling fate...

Yue Yang closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He felt Yue Yu's helpless arms and Fourth Mother's supporting and determined arms. He felt them deeply as a myriad of thoughts came into his mind. Everything that happened since he was transported to this world flashed through his mind, making him realize something. It seemed like he never had control on his own fate, but strangely, his fate seemed to entice him to control it. Maybe this was the purpose of his transfer. Maybe this was the truth of fate. Maybe this was his true destiny!

Since no one was able to control fate, he would try to control it. Things that Thorny Flower Fairy, Prison Emperor and Empress Fei Wen Li were unable to do, he would do it all. This, maybe this was the true destiny of an other worlder like him!

To Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others' surprise, Yue Yang who was closing his eyes in deep thoughts was suddenly enveloped in rainbow-coloured light.

The light started faintly but slowly became brighter.

A kind of unseen force seemed to envelop the whole place.

In their eyes, Yue Yang seemed to become a giant who would be able to shake the heavens and the earth by moving his arms or legs.

Of course, Yue Yang's body did not change at all. It was an extremely weird feeling. It felt like the Code's Power, yet not completely. It felt like it was a power that belonged completely to Yue Yang, similar to the mental power that Yi Nan used during the battle in the Heaven Realm. However, it felt more mysterious and unfathomable.

Everyone couldn't move, as if they have fallen into an ocean of soft foam.

Everyone felt very comfortable and did not want to move at all. Even Yue Yu who was crying in grief stopped sobbing, quietly basked within the rainbow light that felt like mental power field...

Only Fourth Mother was caressing Yue Yang's head.

It was as if she understood the situation Yue Yang was in, hence she wanted to caress his head to comfort him.

Only love was reflected in her eyes.

That was the warmest and gentlest gesture she could give him!

With regards to this child, she couldn't help him much, she was powerless to help him. However, she understood his hardship and difficulty. Yue Yu could cry and pour all of her sadness to him, because he was her brother; Yue Bing and Yue Shuang could smile and share all their happiness with him, because they were his sisters; Ye Kong, Hai Da Fu, Xue Tan Lang and the others could work hard and look at him as a role model, because he was their team leader; The older generation could relax and see him off to battles, because he was everyone's hope!

Only him, only Yue Yang didn't have anyone to share his heart with.

It was like the heavens had already arranged his fate beforehand. It would befall on him no matter if he had the ability to receive it or not.

“It’s been hard on you!” Fourth Mother stroked Yue Yang’s face, that was shining brightly with colorful light. He was her greatest pride, yet the sight of her child trying to fight fate was extremely painful for her. It was not something she wished to see, but she had no other choice. The only thing she could give him was support. Other than a comforting hug, she couldn’t help him with anything.

“Fourth Mother, I will be going!” Yue Yang opened his eyes after a while. The rainbow coloured light immediately returned to his body, and everyone was awakened right at that moment. They immediately recovered from being entranced in the beautiful, comfortable state they were in a few moments ago.

Yue Yang nodded towards Fourth Mother and slowly let Yue Yu go.

He turned around and shouted loudly towards Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others outside the door: “Let’s go, new battles await us. We don’t have time to cry here. We are all grown men, we can bleed but we cannot cry. Let’s fight to our hearts’ content! No matter if this was our destined fate or an accident, we still can’t avoid the battle approaching us! Since it is like this, let’s fight till the end. One day, we will definitely grab hold of our own fate...”

Hui Tai Lang was the first to respond. It flew straight towards Yue Yang and stood in front of him.

The purpose of its existence was to be his most loyal follower.

Following closely behind were Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others. Although they did not know what kind of battle Yue Yang was talking about, they did not have any fears. They were determined to follow him to the ends of the world. Whether it was the Tong Tian Tower or Heaven Realm, they would follow him.

They did not know what kind of future awaited them, but they knew that following Yue Yang would be the best choice in their lives.

Yue Bing said goodbye to her mother.

She was also a warrior, not just his little sister!

Liu Ye, Bao Er and the others were also filled with determination to follow him.....

“Xiao San!” Yue Yu wiped away her tears and caught up with them. She shouted with a sobbing tone: “Bring this second sister with you, your sister swear to not hold you back!”

Yue Yang looked at Yue Yu. When she was worried that he might reject her, he reached out with his hands.

Her tears immediately gushed out like a geyser.

This was not the sorrowful tears from a while ago, but tears from being moved!

She gripped her little brother’s hand and used all her strength to chase after his footsteps. She passed through the door, passed through the border of light and darkness, passed through the barrier in her heart, and dashed forward. In a hill not far away, Princess Qian Qian, who carried the Prison Emperor Divine Sword behind her, Xue Wu Xia, who held the Ancient Book in her hands, Luo Hua City Mistress, who brought her Nine-tailed Fox, Hai Ying Wu, who wore the Ocean Emperor Divine Armor and held the Ocean Emperor Halberd, and Sky Law, who was floating up in the air like a sleeping beauty.....

They had already been waiting in front.



# Chapter 630 – Dangerous times, Disappearance Of The Ancient Seal

---

After going through the teleportation portal again, what appeared before them was a barren, desolate world.

Emptiness. Nothing but a wasteland as far as the eye could see.

A place where there was no life, a dull and lifeless world that devoid of life itself. The remnant of the buildings around the place depicted the glorious past of this world, a world that used to celebrate life. Traces of past life could be found everywhere.....but curiously, this world did not had any life. There were no human life forms, animals, insects or even a single blade of grass. Just a quiet, empty space.

The surface of this world was devoid of colour, just blackness. The sky was gray and there was not a wisp of air movement, no wind.

Nothing seemed to be moving here.

When Ye Kong and Fatty Hai walked out of the teleportation portal and stepped into this world, their first reaction was one of primal fear.

“What is this place? Is this the God’s Ruins?” Even Xue Tang Lang who had a strong will normally did not dare to raise his voice.

They were all afraid that any sound could break this dead silence and awaken the evil that was still in deep sleep beneath.

Contrary to their normal gregarious and boisterous nature, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai both felt nervous and continued to look around nervously.

Prince Tian Luo and the Li Brothers fanned out immediately and formed a semi-circle attack formation. They took each step cautiously, feeling the ground, fearing that a heavier step would

break the ground and unleash trouble. Besides Phoenix Fairy Beauty, the only person that could step forward casually was Hai Yingwu. Phoenix Fairy Beauty was a highly skilled Innate Elder. Furthermore, she had been here before so she did not show any of the fear that was seen on everyone else.

Hai Yingwu had also been to similar territories in the past. Furthermore, she already knew this place as she had been substituting Yue Yang to monitor Thousand Goblin King's double.

Although she was inwardly fearful, she managed to hide her emotion and remained calm on the surface.

"God's Ruins? If it's so easy to get to the God's Ruins, the Innates of Tong Tian Tower wouldn't have so much problems." Princess Qian Qian shook her head side to side and then made a comment that no one expected: "Actually, this is the First Level of the Heaven Stairway!"

"What?" Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were both stunned. This was the Heaven Stairway?

"Is this place really the Heaven Stairway?" Both Yue Bing and Yue Yu could not believe it. In their hearts, Heaven Stairway should be pretty as a flower garden and should be full of blooming flowers. Who would have thought that the real Heaven Stairway was a wasteland. There was not even a sign of life, just a land of nothingness... It made one wonder what kind of disaster happened in the Heaven Stairway that turned it into a wasteland like this. What wars were waged here? They really could not imagine what had happened here! They knew that the history and civilisation here was definitely not inferior than Soaring Dragon Continent.

The entire Heaven Stairway Level 1 was completely destroyed.

Who could have done this?

Also, what was the reason that made the Heaven Stairway's entire civilisation turn into this terrifying wasteland in an instant?

Princess Qian Qian nodded at Yue Yu and Yue Bing, speaking in a serious tone: "While trying to protect the God's Ruins, almost all of the occupants in Heaven Stairway were destroyed. Only a small fraction escaped to the Soaring Dragon Continent to continue their life. They were some of our ancestors, the perished Ming Kingdom and The Valley of Butterfly And Hundred Flowers. Though Heaven Stairway has become the destroyed world like it is today, previously, our ancient ancestors had sealed many strong enemies coveting the God's Ruin, such as Thousand Goblin King. Night Empress had mentioned this to us before, but there are probably more secrets that even she was unable to obtain or understand. We were here because Hai Lan found out that Thousand Goblin King's double will be coming to Heaven Stairway to find and fuse with the demon heart so that he could become the new Thousand Goblin King. Fatty Hai and the others were excited by this news.

Heck, even if Thousand Goblin King was extremely powerful, it was said that the Thousand Goblin King's double was only an Innate, extremely weak.

If the Thousand Goblin King's double attempts to steal the demon heart, they would make sure that he never returns. Of course, they were not wrong in thinking this way. However the more careful Prince Tian Luo thought that this matter was not that easy. If it was only the Thousand Goblin King's last double coming to steal the demon heart, why would they muster such a large force?

Yue Yang could easily take care and eliminate the Thousand Goblin King's double, he did not need anyone else. However, even Sky Law had come along this time!

From this, it could be seen that the enemy was not going to be easy.

"Within Heaven Stairway, there are many ancient seals, and they are all related to the Twelve Zodiac Temples. Since Yue Yang cleared all the obstacles in the Twelve Zodiac Temples, he has

released all the ancient seals. This is due to the inheritance of power from the old to the new generation. When a new expert is born in the Tong Tian Tower, the older generation expert's will begin to disappear... In other words, from the first day that Yue Yang started clearing the Twelve Zodiac Temples, the Ancient Seal started to be released. We have to re-seal them, otherwise, the monsters that were held by those seals will be released from the underground..." Once Xue Wu Xia said these, everyone understood why they had to come to Heaven Stairway.

"Goodness, would there be many enemies like the Scarlet Emperor being released from the underground?" Fatty Hai blurted out, but as soon as that was said, he regretted as it was too scary for monsters like that to be released.

"Some of them may even be more powerful than the Scarlet Emperor!" Yue Yang nodded towards Ye Kong and Fatty Hai. They felt faint.

"It is not 'may', it is definitely." Xue Wu Xia closed the ancient book held in her hands, then explained to them in a calm manner: "Night Empress told us that the stronger the monster, the stronger was the seal and therefore it takes longer for the seal to be released. Looking at the time taken for the seal to be released for Thousand Goblin King and the Scarlet Emperor, it is really nothing compared to the strong warriors ten thousand years ago. Night Empress and Zhi Zun sent us to Heaven Stairway's Level 1 just for some practice. The more frightening enemies are located on higher levels!"

"What are we waiting for then? Let's start re-sealing the ancient seals!" Even Xue Tan Lang was getting impatient.

"Ask him." Luo Hua City Mistress pointed at Luo Yang.

"I am sorry, I don't know how to seal them back." Yue Yang shook his hands, telling them that there was nothing much he could do.

“Huh?” Prince Tian Luo felt a little headache and asked anxiously: “Have you not learnt the art of sealing? Didn’t Prison Emperor pass on the skill to you?”

“Forget about inheriting the skill of sealing, even if I had inherited it, I may not even be able to use it. When the Prison Emperor was at his peak, he could merely seal enemies like the Scarlet Emperor, the Ancient Demon King and the three great leaders of Heaven Realm. According to the principle of the weakest seal being first released, this means they were the weakest enemies. More fearsome ones are still to come. What do you think I can do now? I have not been taught the skill of sealing and my powers had not even reached that level yet!” Yue Yang said honestly.

“Then, then...what do we do now?” Ye Kong asked weakly.

“Wait for them to wake up....” Sky Law jokingly said.

“Blop !”

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai both vomited blood and fainted.

Although it was ruthless, this was the reality that they could not accept.

Although they were fully aware that the enemies were still sealed, no one knew how to renew the seal before the enemy escaped. They had no idea on how to handle the enemy. If they made a mistake in fiddling with the seal, they may even speed up their awakening...

Yue Yang had always been fast to level up, and Ye Kong and Fatty Hai had always been jealous of his abnormal levelling speed. Now, they were not jealous anymore. They even hoped that Yue Yang had an even more abnormal levelling speed, a hundred fold, a thousand fold or even even tens of thousands of folds faster. If he did not manage to learn the skill of sealing and these old monsters broke free from their seals one by one, they really could not

imagine what the world would become.

With just the release of the Black Hell King, the Soaring Dragon Continent was rendered in utter chaos.

It was not easy to kill him.

When the Thousand Goblin King was killed, he was able to maintain a body double to continue his work even though his Soul Crystal had been fused with the Tao Tie Blade.

As for the Scarlet Emperor who battled with the Prison Emperor, and the Ancient Demon King who might have indirectly killed both the Black Hell King and Thousand Goblin King, were all still out there. No one could stop them.

If this was the weakest batch of monsters, then when the old monster awakened, would there be anyone who would be spared?

“Can we fight them?” Fatty Hai said with knees trembling. Just by thinking about the Black Hell King, who was the weakest of the batch, he was already going weak in the knees.

“If they broke out from their seal and emerge, we certainly have no way to fight them. Just a swipe of their hands would kill all of us.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty said with a laugh: “Your enemies are not these sealed old monsters, they won’t be able to escape immediately. The enemy you should focus on are those people who wants to release them earlier , like the Thousand Goblin King’s double and the faithful servants of the Black Hell King....”

“Where are they now ?” Ye Kong jumped off the ground. He could not imagine what it would be like if these people were allowed to release another monster like The Scarlet Emperor or the Ancient Demon King through their sacrificial ceremonies or secret methods.

“You will find a sealed area fifty kilometers from here, another about a hundred kilometers to the left, and another one two hundred kilometers to the right.” Hai Yingwu relates the

information she gathered. So far she had only found these 3 sealed areas, but the enemies may release the seal in more areas. With the death of the Black Hell King, his loyal subjects went crazy in search of these sealed areas. With Thousand Goblin King double's further assistance. They want to speed up the process of unsealing these areas to release the monsters inside, to take the warriors of Soaring Dragon Continent down together with themselves.

“Damn!” Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang and the others ran forward with lightning speed, so much that they had no time to call out their Beasts.

They were sure that they could only fight those enemies within the closest sealed area.

Otherwise, Yue Yang would not set the teleport location here.

They were only worried that they alone might not be able to defeat the loyal soldier of the Black Hell King. They were not confident in this battle, even Yue Yang felt that they were likely to lose!

Hai Yingwu summoned Elder Xing Pan and let this old octopus lead a couple of Abyss Manatee to assist.

Yue Yang was still worried and sent Hui Tai Lang too.

As for the sealed area to the left, Sky Law led Hai Yingwu, Yue Yu, Yue Bing, Drunken Cat Big Sis and the others to intercept the enemy. With these people, Yue Yang was still worried. However, the soldiers of the Black Hell King had angered the Demonic Palace. Sky Execution had not yet completely recovered from the fight with Black Hell King, so he might not come. However, Sky Wrath, Sky Disaster, Sky Fury and other members of the Demonic Palace would not standby and watch.

Yue Yang decided to go to the right sealed area himself.

He was on his way there alone but Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia were worried about him so both decided to accompany

him. Even Luo Hua City Mistress also tagged along.

“I had a feeling that the main assault force will come for the right sealed area. We cannot, at this moment, predict if the Scarlet Emperor will appear or not, but the Ancient Demon King is very likely to appear. Even if the Ancient Demon King was still not at his peak, he could sneak around and cause a lot of problems for us.” Xue Wu Xia tried to convince Yue Yang.

Women’s sixth sense were extremely accurate, especially when it came from Princess Qian Qian, who possesses the Six Records Inherent Skill, and Xue Wu Xia, whose natural instincts were very accurate.

Yue Yang did not need to believe on his own sixth sense, but he will certainly not doubt theirs.

Currently, at the third level of Heaven Stairway...

The grey sky was emitting bright rays that were a thousand times brighter than the sun, a 1.8 meter tall Ancient Demon had just drilled out from the ground. It howled miserably as its body melted under the destructive light.....



# Chapter 631 – Meeting Of Old Friends? Test of Treachery

---

In a distance, around 10 kilometers across the wasteland, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai could see some light from afar.

Over there, there must definitely be a huge army of soldiers performing the sacrificial ceremony in order to speed up the process of dismantling the seal of the Ancient Demons.

They intended to get to there as quickly as they possibly can, but they all stopped at the same time unconsciously when they saw the figures appearing before them. Ye Kong slowly nodded towards Elder Xing Pan and said: “You all go ahead, we will try to get there as soon as possible.”

“We understand.” Elder Xing Pan led two Abyss Manatees, moved past the two dark figures and sped towards the sealed area ten kilometers away.

“.....” Those figures only watched quietly, not showing any signs of trying to stop Elder Xing Pan and the others.

On both side, none needed to be said.

They simply started summoning their beasts, preparing for the deadly battle ahead.

Ye Kong summoned the King Kong Demon Ape and Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle... Fatty Hai summoned the Iron Rhinoceros, Little Hippopotamus and Wind Breath Seabird... As for the party they were facing, the leader of the party first summoned a Gold Dragon King, followed by a higher ranking beast, the Demon Dragon. His body also started to demonify. Horns appeared on his head, claws extended from his fingers and a snake tail grew from his back and started swiping from side to side. His bat wings also unfolded while crimson coloured scales started forming under his skin that was burning with demonic flames.

Behind this man, all the other Rankers started to raise their powers to get ready for battle.

The strongest two warriors had reached a strength level of Innate Level Eight, the level of which Ye Kong and Fatty Hai could never handle in any battle.

However, in reality, these two Innate Level Eight Rankers' target was Hui Tai Lang!

They were two of the five generals under the Black Hell King. After the death of War Tiger Of The East and Fierce Tooth Of The North during the fight in the Death Arena, the remaining Blood Hoof of The South and Wild Wind of the West had come this time. Their loyalty to the Black Hell King had prepared them for death. Even though they knew that they cannot defeat Yue Yang, their wish was to destroy Hui Tai Lang, eliminating Yue Yang's Beast would at least count as Black Hell King's revenge.

These two stubborn Innate Rankers were an old bull and an eagle.

Individually, their strengths were less than either War Tiger Of The East or Fierce Tooth of The North. However, they were both still within Innate Level Eight which cannot be ignored.

Besides Blood Hoof of The South and Wild Wind of The West, there were still a number of Innate-ranked Demon Lords. They were all commanders from the loyal Black Hell King's Personal Army. Each of them had murderous looks and were prepared to duel with Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers till death.

They did not care if they were right or wrong, they only knew that Black Hell King was dead.

As they were all prepared to die for their master, the only reason that they did not commit suicide themselves was because they wanted to destroy Yue Yang and his followers. Revenge was all they could think of...

“It’s you?” Xue Tan Lang raised his power to his maximum level before he stood up and pointed at the figure undergoing demonification, and said: “Bai Yun Fei, I really never thought that it was you!”

“Look at you turning your body into something that is neither human nor monster. Did you sacrifice your potential in exchange for power? Did you burn your life in exchange for a moment of glory? I really don’t know what to say to you anymore! We thought that you could be somebody great, but you are not even worth to be a joke. And you, Xue Qian Ren, you are also a moron.” Pince Tian Luo was normally a very even tempered and calm person. Today, however, was an exception.

When he saw the figures before him, he couldn’t control his temper anymore.

He needed to vent his anger and gave the opposition a good scolding.

The figure standing before him that had become demonified was the Floating Mist Sect’s Junior Sect Leader Bai Yun Fei.

Standing on left and right of Bai Yun Fei were the pitiful guys’ love rival Xue Qian Ren and someone who was almost unrecognisable. Only through inference from Xue Qian Ren’s identity, Ye Kong was able to recall that he was the bastard Xue Qian Qiu.

Xue Qian Qiu was crippled before, but he looked extremely pleased now. This must be because someone had used a secret method to heal him and even help him to reach the Innate Realm.

Or perhaps, Earth Rank Level Two.

Becoming an Innate with no Grimoire, a man-made Innate who did not reach the Innate Realm through their own power and revelation was similar to those Earth Ranked monsters in the Heaven Realm. Although they had strong powers, their realm of

enlightenment was low. Xue Qian Qiu became Earth Ranked Level 2 and similarly, Xue Qian Ren was also at the peak Earth Ranked Level 2. As for Bai Yun Fei, he was Earth Ranked Level 3. They hold great powers, but the problem was that their Grimoires had become decorative items.

The Grimoires could not recognise their power that was obtained through this secret ritual.

What they did to exchange their potential for real power was but a moment of glory, it would not last forever.....

“Feng Qi Sha, Yan Po Jun, Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo. All of you have no right to laugh at me. Did you all get your power through the proper Innate enlightenment? No. It was all due to that damned Yue Clan Third Young Master! Without him, could you all attain Innate Rank?” Bai Yun Fei remained quiet while the angry Xue Qian Ren with his large wings and lion tail bellowed: “You were all lucky, you had Yue Clan Third Young Master to help you. Who do we have to help us? So unfair. You expect us to remain weak and accept the life of a weakling? No, we were never weaker than any of you. The only thing we lacked was a little bit of luck! This reality proves that if we were similarly given a chance, we could also be Innates!”

“Pei! You call this Innate?” Xue Tan Lang did not bother to even look at them.

“Xue Tan Lang, no matter how much you despise me, I am now at the same level as you are, maybe even stronger than you! Yes, you could hypocritically say that you had understood the way to Innate, while we had to use an injection of demon blood to get there. So what? As long as you believe that this world is ruled by power, anyone that has power would be the winner!” Xue Qian Ren could not stand being demeaned by Xue Tan Lang. He bellowed out loud in anger.

“Do you all think this kind of power is everything?” Feng Qi Sha

softly sighed.

“Bai Yun Fei, Qian Ren, turn back and repent!” Yan Po Jun stepped forward, extended his hand, said: “I used to go down the same wrong path as you guys, fortunately I was able to repent and returned to the right way. I still break out in cold sweat recalling those times. Repent, guys. These powers are just an illusion, they are not real!”

“You hypocrites with your fake act of kindness. Yan Po Jun, I can see right through you. Who do you think you are? You only know how to rely on your clan, how to please your Yue Clan Third Young Master to get to where you are now! How dare you lecture me? Aren’t you ashamed of yourself? Look at you, you are still on the lowest Innate level one, whereas I am already on Innate Level two, this scum that you had despised! What is an illusion? I, Xue Qian Qiu will slaughter you and bury you here in Heaven Stairway Level One. I will wipe out the Yan family’s entire hopes and dreams, that is what I call an illusion! His Majesty the Demon King can offer me eternal life. As long as I can make contributions, I will be given greater powers. I don’t even have to cultivate. In the future, forget about Innate Level two, I may even reach Innate Elder Level Two. As for you all, you would just be a laughing stock and a mere bag of skeletons buried beneath this wasteland!” Xue Qian Qiu whose body was infested with worms had tentacles and compound eyes growing on his skin. His appearance was truly revolting.

“.....” Yan Po Jun sadly shook his head and took a step back.

“Pa pa pa pa!” Ye Kong clapped loudly, agreeing with Xue Qian Qiu and praised him.

“People always say that stupidity has no cure! Now I truly understand what they meant. This here was what it is!” Fatty Hai nodded in agreement: “Since we are enemies, there really is nothing further that we could say. Let’s fight! This was not an internal battle within the Soaring Dragon Continent, only a battle between the normal people and the brainless.”

The Li brothers linked their minds together.

They were the first ones to rush out to battle, the one that they want to take on was the Xue Qian Qiu who was not only laughing but sneering at them.

Bai Yun Fei raised his hands and produced a shockwave. Powerful shockwaves came rushing at them knocking the Li brothers back to their corner.

He pointed his finger at Xue Tan Lang: "Within Soaring Dragon Continent, other than Yue Clan Third Young Master, you have the most talent and power. During the Hundred School Elite Competition, I missed the chance to do battle with you. Today, it is either you die or I die....in this world, the winner takes all and the champion takes full power, whoever is the winner today would then be the renown genius of the Soaring Dragon Continent!"

Xue Tan Lang proudly moved forward snickered and spoke with a chilling voice:" Renown genius? Life winner? It may not be me, but it would certainly not be you!"

Both sides were stewing in hatred and anger.

With a loud shout on each side, each found an opponent to battle, their battle to the death.....

On the other side, Yue Yang continued to head towards the right sealed area with Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia in toll. At this same moment, he stopped moving.

Standing before them was a person with a straw hat.

The figure stood there all alone like a ghost.

On the other hand, it looked like he knew of Yue Yang's arrival over on this side. He was waiting quietly, just waiting for him, patiently and silently, just like when he waited for the Black Hell King. As usual, he had his back to Yue Yang, believing that Yue Yang was a true gentleman, that he would never mount a sneak attack. He leisurely clasped his hand behind him while standing on

top of a broken pillar.

Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian, Xue Wu Xia and Luo Hua City Mistress had never seen this person before.

But, a mere look made them understand who this person was.

Today, this was the vessel of the Ancient Demon King's soul.....

“Yue Clan Third Young Master, Do you know who I am?” The shadow came across with some cheekiness, asking: ”Surprised? Actually I did not need to come see you this quickly, you were a very fun toy for me to play with. With you, my life would be more exciting. Similar to the times when Prison Emperor was around. When he was present , a new glorious historical record gets added to my life. You are not at his level yet, Prison Emperor was such an elegant toy for me to play with, I admire him. I do certainly appreciate you Yue Clan Third Young Master, the first toy that I could not understand in these thousands of years.....because of that, I decided to come out to meet you, giving you a real target to aim for! You know that if you do not work harder, you would just die a very terrible death.

“Have you gone crazy from age?” Yue Yang stared at him like he had just met a mental patient.

“No, I could assure you that I have no mental problems. You said these because you were just afraid, you are scared of me!” The shadowy figure in a straw hat laughed very hard.

“Aren't you just the vessel of the Ancient Demon King, what's there to be afraid of? You could scare the little children, but for us, this is really not enough.” Princess Qian Qian unsheathed the Prison Emperor Divine Sword from her back and held it in her hand, meanwhile raising her power, trying to summon the power of the divine sword and the will of the Prison Emperor. Suddenly, they felt as though there was a divine sword hanging in the sky, and this sword could easily divide the heavens and earth. The sword suppressed everything in the area.

“You all want to kill me? Too early!” The shadow being suppressed by the power of the divine sword was still able to speak casually: “I am not as stupid as the Black Hell King. If I see any danger to myself, I would certainly not come out to meet with you all.”

“What do you want to say?” Luo Hua City Mistress stepped forward and held Yue Yang’s hands, providing support for him so that he would not lose his mind and do something rash.

“I am only here to say hello.” The showy figure sighed :”Actually, I really would like to kill all of you right now, but I am still unable to do so.”

“Then leave!” Yue Yang was tempted to use the Ancient Code Power to destroy this guy, but he guess if he killed off this shadow, all he was doing was destroying one of the many vessel of the Ancient Demon King’s Soul only, and it did not affect his soul at all. All Ancient Demon King had to do was to find another one, then he could come again to seek trouble with him. He could never kill them all. He needs to locate Ancient Demon King’s flaw.

It was possible that this vessel was here to test him.

He wanted to test and understand Yue Yang’s power.

Using a vessel, in exchange to know Yue Yang’s true power..... this plan would be the true aim of the Ancient Demon King.

Yue Yang would not fall into his trap, he raised his right hand, brought out the Tao Tie Blade and prepared for battle. Princess Qian Qian, the obseving Xue Wu Xia and the encouraging Luo Hua City Mistress followed suit.

When the shadowy figure felt that Yue Yang did not fall for his trick. He waved his hand, breaking the space with a silver streak of light.

It had disappeared.

He really did not want to battle Yue Yang today.



He was afraid that his secret would be reveal and Yue Yang would be able to see through him!

# Chapter 632 – You are already dead!

---

Wasteland, Battle intensifies.

Golden Dragon King dove to the ground while spewing out dragon flame that melted the ground.

Prince Tian Luo had to retreat quickly. The other Demon Dragon coordinated with the Golden Dragon King and spewed out demon flames and corrosive venom. These streams of high temperature venom had strong corrosive properties. Fan Lun Tie used her axe and threw it towards the Demon Dragon, while in the air, the axe was melted away by these streams of venom, becoming just a liquid and splashing on the ground.

Ox-Head Li Ao and Fan Lun Tie could not free themselves to help Prince Tian Luo's battle with the dragons, as they were being circled by five Demon Bears and two of the Demon Abyss Lords.

If not for the arrival to the rescue by Golden Elves Lin En, Anna and Bao Er, both of them would have been in danger.

“Purify!” Liu Ye's Cleansing Innate Skill was useless against normal people. However, against the Demon Abyss Lords, it was powerful even against those that had reached Innate Realm.

“Damn humans, damn their Innate Skills!”

The Demon Abyss Lord, who was far stronger than Liu Ye, dodged with fright at the gentle white light emitted by Liu Ye.

He ran away but left cursing loudly, hatred emanating from his form.

It wanted to use its Blood Axe and split Liu Ye into two with a single stroke, but it soon found out that even if it was three times stronger, it would be impossible for it to do just that. This harmless looking little girl was being protected by a Guardian Beast, the Perforate Deer. This deer had no attacking power, but it can instantly move through any obstacles in its path. Coupled with

the master's synchronised movements, they had an abnormal dodging ability.

No attack could actually hit her in the process.

Worst still, none of the movements made by the opponent could escape her pursuit!

Perforate Deer and the little girl both almost arrived at the same instant. Whenever they caught up to their opponents, their opponents would be in despair. Furthermore, this completely innocent and weak looking little girl emitted a gentle light, which directly damaged a demon's body. Even the defense of an Innate Ranker's body would not be enough.....

The Demon Abyss Lords were very sure that if this little girl was pitched against a human warrior, she would not be able to even defeat a level six elder.

However, if she fight against them, she could defeat an Innate Level One opponent, and beat them to a pulp. It was truly frightening!

“Standstill! Purify!” Liu Ye had never fought alone against an enemy this powerful. This was so different from their normal practice runs, against her now were opponents that would fight with their lives. For a person that had no real battle experiences, Liu Ye felt a little nervous, but as an obedient disciple of Yue Yang, she would alway remember the things that he taught her and the tactics that he developed for her. She would meticulously implement them.... She was but a novice in the battlefield, but on tactics, she was perhaps in the master class.

The tactics developed by Yue Yang were so detailed that they were hopeless for the opponent to counter.

Liu Ye picked an enemy with the densest demonic qi. Yue Yang told her earlier that this kind of enemy would be easiest for her to kill. Unless the opponent was above Innate Level Six, she, who

possessed the Cleansing Innate Skill, she did not need to fear enemies that had dense demonic qi.

Cleansing Innate Skill was the nemesis of all demonic qi, poisons and even evil spirits.

Together with the Perforate Deer moving in step, once her purifying energy touched an enemy, the power would immediately leave their body.

Liu Ye did not need to find their weaknesses, all she needed was to keep up the attacks.....If the enemy launched their full power, then the Perforate Deer would just run straight through them, and as long as she kept in step with the deer, she would never be harmed. For Liu Ye, if she kept her focus with combined attacks from Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers, she would be able to stay safe and sound for at least half an hour and not be defeated.

She currently could not teleport anyone with her.

If Liu Ye brought along her companions for the attack, with her in the battle, the enemy was just going to be in tears all round!

“Get Lost! I do not want to fight you!” The Demon Abyss Lord felt so depressed that he wanted to kill himself. It had been hit by the attacks for more than twenty times and had not been able to even touch the opponent at all.

“Clear mind, my heart and mind are cleared. I cannot hear anything. I must focus.” Liu Ye nervously keeps mumbling to herself. Yue Yang had told her before, no matter how much dirty and foul language the enemy hurled at her, she had to keep her mind clear. When she was faced with the enemy, ready for the kill, she could not lose her focus. This was the first time she was facing the enemy alone. She needed to remind herself time and time again to not be affected by the foul language and insults that the enemy was hurling at her.

“Pffff.....”The Demon Abyss Lord was injured and angry over the

event, as it threw up blood.

“Get lost you lowly ants. Die!” On the other side of the battlefield, they were fighting against Xue Qian Qiu, whose body had turned into worms, which make him unafraid of any attacks.

Everytime the Li Brothers managed to create a hole in Xue Qian Qiu’s body, Xian Qian Qiu would only grow more tentacles from these holes.

Conversely, the tentacles on his body fiercely whipped towards the Li Brothers, sending them flying through the air.

If not for the defence of the Golden Soldier Ant, both of them would have been smashed to pulp by now.

Xue Qian Qiu was like an tireless, voracious tentacle worm. He relentlessly attacked the Li Brothers while laughing as he attacked, “Dumb Fools, I am invincible. You puny people will never understand my power. I am immortal, you cannot kill me, come, try to kill me! Use your weapons, and stab my body. I can even pose nicely for you and let you kill me. Look at your incompetent self, so pitiful, just like the world’s greatest tragedy, Hahaha, Such fun!”

Boom!

A fiery cloud descended from above, burning Xue Qian Qiu black and all his tentacles to ashes.

Yan Po Jun came flying towards them shouting at the Li Brothers, “Change opponents, let me kill this Xue Qian Qiu!”

Xue Qian Qiu got very annoyed and spoke with a shrill voice, “Its you, Yan Po Jun? You self-confident idiot. Do you think I would be harmed by this tiny flame? I possess an immortal body that the Demon King presented to me. Just a little fire from your Flaming Lion and you think you could kill me?”

“In reality, you are already dead....the you now is only a piece of meat!” Yan Po Jun showed disgust in his face when he said this,

"Yue Clan Third Young Master had already killed you. Xue Qian Qiu does not exist in this world anymore. You, you are just a lump of rotting meat that is full of worms. The Ancient Demon King might have told you that you are still intact, but you are just naive, still thinking that you are still the old Xue Qian Qiu. If you are still Xue Qian Qiu, can you remember who is your fiancée?"

"Me, I have a fiancée? Yes, must be her, I am positive that it is her!" Xue Qian Qiu looked up at the sky, at the moving Liu Ye. He immediately came to his senses and pointed at Liu Ye, replying boldly to Yan Po Jun, "Yan Po Jun, you think you can strike me down with just a few of your words? I do not deny that when I was reborn, I lost some of my past memories, but I am certain that I am Xue Qian Qiu....you think that with just these few words from you, you can create a rift between me and his highness Demon King? I will be loyal to his highness forever. Anything that you say is useless!"

"What an idiot, I am not talking to you at all. Don't you understand Xue Qian Ren? You, Xue Qian Qiu and even Bai Yun Fei are all god damn parasites. You are all dead and became toys for the Ancient Demon King, his plaything!" Yan Po Jun ignored Xue Qian Qiu, looked back at the battle between Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and Xue Qian Ren.

"....Don't say it anymore. I will never believe you, Yan Po Jun, keep your ruse!" Xue Qian Ren's face turned extremely ugly instantly.

"Poor thing, just a mere parasitic body!" Ye Kong waved at Fatty Hai, "I can do this alone."

"Monkey, don't you damn die!"

Fatty Hai indeed left the scene, leaving with his Wind Breath Seabird, looking for areas where the battle was tense, and that would be the Ox-head Li Ao and Fan Lun Tie's battle.

Xue Qian Ren shook with anger and howled at Xue Qian Qiu,

"Attack, use your Worm Sea Technique, don't allow Yan Po Jun to utter another word, just kill him!" As soon as that was said, there was a loud bang that echoed from the sky, Feng Qi Sha had defeated his opponent and came up beside Yan Po Jun while looking at Ye Kong and said, "Let us use the Great Totem Pole Battle Technique!"

The Li Brothers in the sky now reversed and sped towards the ground. Countless meteorite iron pillar had been inserted in the ruins.

A domain like energy rose from the ground and covered the entire battle ground.

Beside the battling Bai Yun Fei and Xue Tan Lang in the sky, all the others would be affected by the Great Totem Pole Technique and its energy. The demonised Bai Yun Fei quickly circled around Xue Tan Lang. He did not ride the Golden Dragon King as he focused on speed.

Xue Tan Lang was a unique opponent.

He moved at a very high speed while specialized in freezing his opponent, severely slowing down their reactions.

The Storm Giant merged with Xue Tan Lang, allowed him to control the surrounding air while making the snow in the air dance and making a giant storm.....though he could not control lightning, he could use the storm to control lightning. By increasing the storm's power, he even caused the likes of the Golden Dragon King, which was a large target, into ice. Bai Yun Fei was just hit with a cold punch, caused half of his body to turn to ice. If not for the demonic fire that was still burning, he would already be at a disadvantage.

Bai Yun Fei finally understood that this Xue Tan Lang was truly abnormal.

An abnormal genius.

Although he was not as fearsome as Yue Clan Third Young Master, Xue Tan Lang was also not an ordinary being....fortunately, Bai Yun Fei was faster.

Speed was the key to winning this battle!

“Die!” Bai Yun Fei moved lightning fast and passed Xue Tan Lang, dodging the on coming cold punch, pressing his burning claw on Xue Tan Lang’s chest and made the demonic flames explode.

“Is this the power of a peak Innate Level Three?” Xue Tan Lang with blood flowing out of the corner of his mouth, coolly wiped it away before looking down at his chest, where it was still burning with the claw marks. Then he blew a breath, and the demonic flames just turned to ice.

Bai Yun Fei thought that this sneak attack earned him the advantage, but in the midst of congratulating himself on it, he realised that the attack was quickly nullified.

He felt a sharp piercing pain emanating from the palm of his hand.

Little did he know that the demonic flames on his hands had been extinguished and a layer of frost had built over his hands, disappearing slowly.

Bai Yun Fei took a deep breath and exhaled, “You have truly proved yourself, Xue Tan Lang. Very good, you are truly worthy to witness my full power!”

All of a sudden, Xue Tan Lang just vanished, and when he appeared again, he had already landed on the head of the Golden Dragon King. He placed his hands on the Beast’s head, with tremendous strength pressed the head of the dragon toward the floor....Bai Yun Fei tried to rescue the dragon, but Prince Tian Luo managed to conjure up the Flaming Shield, blocked and, stopped Bai Yun Fei who was just getting ready to strike back. “It’s not that



I cannot defeat your dragon, but I had promised that I will let him off three times, three time to repay the favours that the ancestors owed the Golden Dragon Clan! Now, I have repaid all of it to you!”

The Prince Tian Luo’s strength was certainly behind that of Bai Yun Fei.

Bang. Smashing toward the ground.

At the same moment that Bai Yun Fei attacked, he shot towards the higher class Demon Dragon like a meteor. The dragon opened its big mouth wide to swallow up Prince Tian Luo in a single gulp, but the Prince of Tian Luo summoned his Skyfire Meteor. It descended from high above, from being very slow to lightning fast, in a flash, hit right at the back of the Demon Dragon, caused it to howl loudly in pain and then fell flat onto the ground.....

“Use your treasures!” Bai Yun Fei’s voice became suddenly sombre. He raised his hands, holding onto a Holy Rank Black Magic Box that was covered in thick demonic qi..

Xue Qian Ren’s demonic flame claws were at Gold Level.

And, Xue Qian Qiu popped into his mouth and ate a greenish looking Demonic Pearl.

Aaaaaaaaaaaaaah.....While the dark lights sparkled around them, the Demon Abyss Lords, that Liu Ye was fighting, fell to the ground in great pain. Being hurt badly, it raised its hand towards Xue Qian Qiu saying, “Help me!” Xue Qian Qiu smiled sinisterly. Countless eyes appeared on his body and shone with cruel lights. Suddenly, all his tentacles extended towards the Demon Abyss Lord and pieced its body, snatched up all his flesh and strength, sucked it all into his own body to become a part of him.

The way in which the flesh was taken and consumed was disgusting.

Liu ye almost threw up.

But, she held it back.

Just as she was preparing to start her battle, Ye Kong waved at her and said, "Let me do it, this kind of evildoers is most suited for me to fight against!"

# Chapter 633 – Curse of the magic box

---

Gale of the West and Blood Hoofs of the South were relentlessly pursuing Hui Tai Lang that was running around in a loop continuously.

They knew that killing it would not be easy. Yue clan's third young master's devoted beast was not just any average beast, it was a World Exterminating Demon Wolf. It had not fully grown yet, but this beast could bite through a Heaven Ranker as if it was biting through a Chinese Cabbage once it has reached its prime. This was precisely why Gale of the West and Blood Hoofs of the South were determined to kill it now. Killing the beast was the only way to weaken Yue clan's third young master's abilities.

“Meow! “ Hui Tai Lang was sharp enough to know that the two was out to kill it and stealthily took flight, delaying time instead of confronting them.

It would be more advantageous for it the more time stalled.

Gale of the West and Blood Hoofs of the South tailed behind as close as they could and striked with all their might, aiming to behead this beast.

Ruins.

Due to some unforeseen events, the battle was slightly stopped, but it was about to break out again.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai managed to defeat the enemy after gaining support from the Great Totem Pole Technique that increased their strength. Upon witnessing the unfortunate turn of events, Bai Yun Fei took out a black magic box. This holy-ranked box was filled with a curse, and was in fact a double-edged sword. When opened, the user's enemy would be cursed. However, there was a possibility that the curse might backfire, striking the owner with an even deadlier curse. Regular warriors daren't use it, for each

time the box was opened, the chances of the curse backfiring increases and luck would not be on the owner's side in future battles.

However, Bai Yun Fei was not worried at all. From the Ancient Demon King's place, he had obtained a secret method to gain immunity from the curse.

This meant that the curse would only strike his enemies when he opened the box.

No harm would come to him as there was no possibility of a backfire.

“Magic Box, open.”

Bai Yun Fei gently opened the box, letting out an evil black light within.

The black light slowly took on the form of a demon, and pounced in the direction of Xue Tan Lang. Xue Tan Lang attempted to dodge, but was shocked to realize that he wasn't able to move as the curse was already in effect. Seeing what was happening, Prince Tian Luo ran towards Xue Tan Lang and pushed him away, using his own body to block the demon. With all of his power, Prince Tian Luo formed his Flaming God Shield and blocked Bai Yun Fei, who was attacking from above.

Xue Tan Lang was enraged, he wore an unchanging ruthless expression with a murderous gaze.

He flashed behind Bai Yun Fei and gave him a heavy hit.

Smashing him down.

Strangely, the fatal blow that Bai Yun Fei had taken did not have any effect on him. On the other hand, Prince Tian Luo suddenly vomited blood and there was an obvious indent on his armour. His body then slowly froze into ice.

Xue Tan Lang was stunned to see that his attack had caused harm

to his ally instead.

“This is the Substitute Curse.” Bai Yun Fei laughed proudly: “Oh Xue Tan Lang, any idea why I didn’t dodge when you attacked? Indeed, I was wishing you’ll hit me hard! How comfortable it was... If only you had hit harder, how much more comfortable would it have been? Hahaha, want to know why I’m not afraid of the magic box’s curse? That’s because I have placed a curse on myself, and so long as this little curse continues to exist, the magic box will never be able to release its curse on me. Furthermore, so long as I continue to hold onto the magic box, you are all guaranteed a tragic end!”

“.....” Xue Tan Lang held on to a shivering Prince Tian Luo and lifted his head up to glare at Bai Yun Fei with eyes filled with hatred and anger.

“It’s okay, I’m fine.” Prince Tian Luo kept bleeding from his mouth. He made his best effort to stand, but wasn’t able to as his injuries were too severe.

If Xue Tan Lang had attacked normally, under normal conditions, Prince Tian Luo would still be able to resist it with his defensive abilities. However, this Substitute Curse had rendered him unable to move at all. Just one hit had caused his internal organs to be seriously damaged. The true reason for Prince Tian Luo’s severe injuries was that apart from leaving him defenseless, the curse had also caused Xue Tan Lang’s powerful freezing attack to seep deep into Prince Tian Luo’s internal organs.

Bai Yun Fei wasn’t pleased with the way Xue Tan Lang was glaring at him, all indignant and infuriated. He felt that as the victor, he shouldn’t be on the receiving end of such a glare.

He gave himself a heavy punch in his chest.

Self-harm?

Prince Tian Luo twitched all over and blood spurted out from his

mouth. It was very clear that Bai Yun Fei's chest was completely fine, but another indentation had appeared on Prince Tian Luo's chest. Under the power of the Substitute Curse, his ribs had broken into 3 pieces. At this time, Fatty Hai's Hippo Meteor Punch and Ye Kong's Totem Pole Explosion stopped right at his forehead.

Now everybody understood why this damned Cursed Magic Box was a Holy-ranked Artifact. It turned out that its curse was continuously active.

It was not limited to a one-time usage.

The Substitute Curse on Prince Tian Luo's body continued to take effect.

Before the Substitute Curse was dispelled, all of Bai Yun Fei's injuries would be transferred to Prince Tian Luo.

This was the most frightening aspect of the curse...

Fatty Hai and Ye Kong who were so angry that their lungs were about to burst could only stop their attacks so that they wouldn't accidentally use too much force and beat their comrade to death.

They all stopped, but Xue Qian Ren did not.

Slashing his claws, he ripped Ye Kong and Fatty Hai's back apart. Flesh and blood flew all over the place... Ye Kong and Fatty Hai wanted to retaliate and attack back at first, but Bai Yun Fei suddenly raised up his fists and prepared to deliver a smashing blow to his head. Xue Tan Lang howled out in grief and carried Prince Tian Luo 100 meters away, preparing to escape. However, Bai Yun Fei appeared right in front of them and glared at Xue Tan Lang icily: "Kneel down, otherwise Prince Tian Luo will immediately die! Escaping is useless, this curse has an effectiveness radius of hundreds of meters, how far do you think you can run? If you don't want to see your comrade reduced to a pile of broken bones, kneel down in front of me right now."

"Impossible, I'd rather die!" Prince Tian Luo struggled out

painfully.

“Pa!” Bai Yun Fei slapped his face powerfully: “Shut up, it’s not your turn to speak now! Right now I’m the boss, only my words count!”

Bai Yun Fei had actually wanted to slap Prince Tian Luo the second time, but Xue Tan Lang stopped his hand angrily and shoved Bai Yun Fei’s whole body to the ground. He raised his fists up high, almost turning Bai Yun Fei’s head into a rotten watermelon.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai stopped Xue Tan Lang’s fist with all their power: “There must be a way to dispel the curse, there must be! Don’t be impulsive! Let us think about it, there must be a way to dispel this damned curse! Leave this trash Bai Yun Fei alive for the time being, restrain yourself for a while, I will think of a good idea soon...” As Ye Kong and Fatty Hai advised Xue Tan Lang frantically, Bai Yun Fei leisurely stood up, his face full of arrogance. He brushed the dust off his clothes, showing his calm. Xue Qian Ren, Xue Qian Qiu and Bai Yun Fei then started to attack Prince Tian Luo like lunatics.

Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai used their bodies to protect Prince of Tian Luo who was already unconscious. They didn’t move at all, completely submitting to their enemies’ attacks.

When the Li Brothers joined the fight, Bai Yun Fei opened the Magic Box once again.

It was the second time he used it.

The Li Brothers became blind immediately, making it easy for Xue Qian Ren to give them a hard, flying kick.

“I’ll go!” Liu Ye didn’t know if her Cleansing Inherent Skill would be able to dispel a Holy-ranked Artifact’s curse, but there was no way she could do nothing and watch her comrades being battered by their enemies.

“Leave this place immediately!” Xue Tan Lang, whose face was drenched in blood, grabbed Xue Qian Ren’s hands and threw him out. Ye Kong and Fatty Hai also immediately worked together to kick Xue Qian Qiu and immobilize Bai Yun Fei. They understood that they wouldn’t be able to win against Bai Yun Fei, who was holding a Holy-ranked Artifact, with normal methods. This was not only the power of a Holy-ranked Artifact’s curse, it was also the Ancient Demon King’s scheme.

Ancient Demon King had already predicted this result before. Unless Yue Yang was here, they would not be able to break through their enemies’ schemes.

Right now, if they continued to fight, they would only hasten Prince Tian Luo’s death.

Hence, they could only choose to escape.

Xue Qian Ren was beyond enraged. When he was just thinking of beating up the Li Brothers, Fan Lun Tie and the others just now, Xue Tan Lang had sealed him in ice with just one attack. On the other side, Xue Qian Qiu who was charging towards Liu Ye was even more unlucky. With a blast of Cleansing Inherent Skill, he started to howl out in pain. He quickly escaped from Liu Ye as his body started fuming with smoke.

Only then did he realize that Liu Ye was not a girl that he could take liberties with as he wished.

Fan Lun Tie was an Ox-head Warrior that would never retreat at normal times. However, today, she was the first to stand out as she supported the Li Brothers: “Go, let’s go!”

Those Demon Abyss Lords that were at disadvantageous positions just now started circling them again.

Thinking of escape?

Not that easy!

In that situation where fight or flight was difficult for them, Bao



Er, who had not fought at all from the beginning, suddenly stood up and spoke out a little shyly: “Why don’t I try something! I don’t know if this will work, but Brother Yue Yang said that I’m a lucky star. Let’s try it out. Don’t blame me if it doesn’t work!”

Her words were like the light at daybreak, it illuminated everyone’s hearts in an instant.

Fatty Hai’s tears started falling out: “My dear great aunt (Chinese people uses seniority in family tree as a form of respect), why don’t you say it earlier? You are going to shock me to death! Quick, quick, save this fellow. Nowadays the number of people who are willing to call me Big Boss has been shrinking, so you have to bring him back. If this fellow dies, the old fox will tear open my bones. I would never be able to borrow erotic books from him anymore!”

Xue Tan Lang appeared beside Bao Er in an instant. His hands stopped Bai Yun Fei’s fists that were about to smash on Bao Er and said: “Your debt, I will count it slowly in the future! Scram!”

The moment he flicked his hand, the Innate Rank Level 3 Bai Yun Fei was flung away into the distant sky.

Bai Yun Fei fell to the ground, shocked speechless.

Xue Tan Lang whose power was equally matched to him just now, how did he become so strong?

Was this his power when enraged? Or was this the innate potential in Xue Tan Lang’s body that had not been released?

Bao Er hurriedly summoned her grimoire and summoned her Guardian Beast, ‘Little Flower Fairy’. Little Flower Fairy rushed towards Prince Tian Luo who was unconscious and flew around him. With a swish of her hand, rainbow coloured light entered Xue Tan Lang’s body.

In an instant, from Prince Tian Luo’s body, an demonic shadow jumped out as if it couldn’t stand to be inside anymore.

Without giving it a chance to escape, the Little Flower Fairy

immediately covered it with rainbow coloured bubbles.

The demonic shadow struggled with all its power, but was unable to escape.

Bao Er shouted urgently: “This is bad! My Little Flower Fairy can’t dispel the curse. I can only make it weaker. We need to find someone to bear the curse, I can’t dispel it completely!”

Hahahah!

Bai Yun Fei’s expression was initially very bad, but after hearing this, he thought that the little golden elf girl was only loud thunder and drizzle!

Bai Yun Fei, Xue Qian Ren and Xue Qian Qiu laughed maniacally, pleased with themselves.

Since they had to find someone to bear the Substitute Curse, they would still suffer in their hands. Prince Tian Luo was already seriously injured, wouldn’t it be an ideal situation for them to change their target? Bai Yun Fei laughed out happily, Xue Qian Ren laughed out loud, pleased with himself, Xue Qian Qiu also laughed out degradingly. His laugh was so nasty that everyone felt like carving out his flesh with a knife, fry his skin, break his bones, pull out his muscles, drink his blood...

Hahahhaah!

Suddenly, Ye Kong also laughed. He laughed like a madman.

Then, Fatty Hai started to laugh too. Immediately afterwards, Xue Tan Lang who would never laugh normally started to laugh. Even Li Brothers who would usually not speak a word even when they were beaten up started to laugh. All of them started howling out in laughter, laughed until tears formed in their eyes.

All of their laughter made Bai Yun Fei and the others dumbfounded. They stared at their enemies who seemed to have gone mad blankly.

What the heck?

Have these people gone mad because they couldn't endure the pain after being beaten up so much? Xue Qian Qiu exploded in anger and cried out angrily with his crow-like voice: "Don't laugh! What's so funny about this? Everyone shut your mouth! You are all going to die, what's so funny about that? Shut up! All of you are fools who don't understand that your lives are at their ends. Idiots!"

"Really sorry, just now we thought of a very funny thing." Ye Kong didn't pay attention to Xue Qian Qiu, he turned around and apologized to Bao Er, then slowly stroked her head: "Quickly put the curse on my body. I really can't wait for it, I want to know the effects of this curse. Right, can you also put the blind curse on the Li Brothers onto my body? Yes, it's fine if you put more curses on me, please move their curses to my body!"

"It's fine if you have more curses?" Bai Yun Fei was dumbfounded. Could it be that Ye Kong had an Inherent Skill that could make him immune to curses?

# Chapter 634 – The Secret at the Bottom of the Lake

---

When Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the others reached their destination, they saw a huge lake.

The lake was still, and the water had become bright red coloured.

Countless corpses from the sacrificial offering filled the waters.

“Seems like we were one step too late.” Princess Qian Qian looked around the surrounding with a grave expression. Looking at the messy traces on the lake, with her Six Records Inherent Skill, she was able to quickly find a suspicious set of wet footprints. From the footprints, there was at least multiple human-shaped lifeforms coming out from the lake with the help of the offerer.

“Let’s follow!” Luo Hua City Mistress saw that the wet footprints were not dry yet, which meant that the enemies had not left for a long time. If they followed the footprints, maybe they would still be able to catch up to them on time.

“Something seems wrong.” Xue Wu Xia shook her hands.

She frowned and thought for a while.

She shook her head: “We can safely assume that some of the enemies had left, but are these the footprints of the offerer, or the thing that was sealed inside? We can’t tell at all! I think the lake is the strange one. If we go, I think we may miss out something.”

Listening to Xue Wu Xia’s analysis, Yi Nan who had came out from the Grimoire World asked: “Then shall we split up?”

Before Yi Nan finished speaking, Luo Hua City Mistress immediately refuted: “No, it’s bad to split our forces. We need to stick together to display our maximum power. Splitting up will make it easier for our enemies to strike us one by one. We can’t let Ancient Demon King succeed with his plans. Wu Xia is right, I also

think something is wrong. If it is so easy to release an Ancient Seal, it is definitely not an Ancient Seal! Black Hell King, Thousand Goblin King and Scarlet Emperor could only escape from their seals after hundreds of years and after receiving many sacrificial offerings.

Right now, do you think it's possible that the Ancient Seal would be released so easily after Ancient Demon King randomly asked the Black Hell Army to find a few human lives as sacrifice? It is impossible! There are only two possibilities in this current situation. First, the Ancient Demon King had already attempted to release the seal before. Second, he's playing tricks on us, trying to deceive us."

Princess Qian Qian nodded after thinking for a while: "The second point is more probable."

Xue Wu Xia pointed out accurately: "Most importantly, if the sealed beings are all Ancient Demon King's friends or subordinates, would he reveal the secret to us? Of course not. He would only reveal it if these sealed beings are his enemies... Ancient Demon King would kill two birds with one stone this way. Not only would he be able to cause chaos in Tong Tian Tower by releasing the sealed beings, he would also be able to eradicate us, his enemies."

Her words made Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and Yi Nan to think deeply.

Ancient Demon King's ultimate purpose was definitely the God's Ruins.

According to common sense, it would be better if Ancient Demon King had more power before he did anything. Right now, before Ancient Demon King's powers recovered, his actions of hurriedly releasing these sealed beings proved that his intention was not that simple. There must be a deeper meaning behind his actions.

"Now what?" One of the girls finally passed the decision making

task to Yue Yang.

“We can assume that since the enemy has already evaded us far away, we may not even be able to catch up to them if we chase after them. Then why should we waste our energy? They said that rather than having ten birds on trees, it would be better to have one bird in hand. Right now, there’s something wrong with this lake, so we should first investigate it clearly. If we found that there’s nothing wrong, we can continue to chase after the enemy. We won’t be able to catch up anyway, so we should do choose something that we have confidence in.” Yue Yang smiled.

The enemies’ thought process was undoubtedly hard to guess, but they could think about it in another way.

Since they weren’t able to guess the enemies’ real thought process, then they should at least avoid the traps their enemies had laid for them. They should be doing something that their enemies didn’t want to see the most.

There seemed to be something wrong with the lake?

There was also water footprints coming out from the lake...

Splitting their forces was most probably the decision that their enemies wanted them to make the most. Hence, they must definitely not make a decision according to their enemies plans. The thing that their enemies did not want to see was Yue Yang and the others staying back to investigate the lake. Otherwise, the enemies wouldn’t leave such an obvious track in front of Princess Qian Qian who possessed the Six Records Inherent Skill. They were just pretending to reveal what they intended to hide!

“You go and take a look around below, we’ll wait for you at the shore!” Luo Hua City Mistress thought that this was a good way to lure the enemies’ out.

“No.” Yue Yang rejected with one word.

“Don’t worry, we’ll be fine.” Luo Hua City Mistress had already

performed Body Fusion cultivation with Yue Yang, and also received Night Empress and Zhi Zun's tutelage, hence she had improved a lot.

Especially for the special kind of spiritual energy, which was left behind by the warriors of the Heaven Stairway, that was similar to the Code's energy, Luo Hua City Mistress had deeper understanding of the energy than Yi Nan and was able to control it better. Hence, she would still be able to put a fight when facing against enemies that were way stronger than her. At the very least, she, who had low defense and high attack previously was now able to protect herself without any problems. Her favourite beast, Nine-tailed Spirit Fox, had also followed a humanoid route evolution after Zhi Zun's secret tutelage... Its every rank up and level up was all the fruits of Luo Hua City Mistress hardwork in cultivating it.

Nine-tailed Spirit Fox was not much currently.

However, it would definitely become a Holy Beast or even a Divine Beast in the end.

Because of its special connection to Luo Hua City Mistress, Nine-tailed Spirit Fox would become like Zhi Zun's humanoid beast, Blood Winged Angel. It would be different from a normal Divine Beast.

"Having confidence is one matter, strategizing and implementing it is another matter." Yue Yang laughed: "If the enemy is not a fool, the strategy of 'luring the enemy' would definitely fail. Ancient Demon King is not a fool. He even thought that we may not even realise his tactics, so we need to do something that he doesn't like. Only then would we be able to frustrate him. You guys, come over here, let's do this..."

"We hate scheming the most." Princess Qian Qian expressed her dislike on the surface, but she actually liked this aspect of Yue Yang. She liked him to be especially 'cunning'.

Xue Wu Xia?

She was the one who always executed Yue Yang's plans with the most rapport!

Yue Yang sent Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and Yi Nan back inside the Grimoire World. Then he, alone, jumped into the lake that was giving out a very strong smell of blood. He swam deeper into the lake, believing in his instincts, and continued to swim downwards.

When Yue Yang started diving into the lake, a few shadows appeared behind the distant ruins.

They saw that Yue Yang did not split his forces. He did not follow the tracks and chase after the footprints, instead he kept the girls and dove into the lake.

The one that seemed to be the leader couldn't help but to sigh: "His majesty was right. This Yue Clan third young master is really difficult to deal with. If this person continued to exist, our plan to conquer the Tong Tian Tower will be very hard to accomplish. Why does such an exceptional talent always appear in Tong Tian Tower? I initially thought that the Prison Emperor at that time was just an exception. I never thought that this Yue Clan third young master would appear."

The man standing beside the leader immediately refuted: "No, there are many dangerous people in the Tong Tian Tower. It is not only the Yue Clan third young master. There is also that Zhi Zun!"

The leader nodded: "I'm really looking forward to fighting against her. It's a pity that we can't reveal ourselves publicly for now."

The other man agreed: "Yes, his majesty's plan is perfect, but we have too little time."

Another man, who did not speak from the start and stood on the left side, suddenly murmured: "If we cannot fight, then why would you go to the Heaven Realm to invite us here? It took a great toll



on us to go through the Heaven Realm Door. We thought that we could enter the God's Ruins immediately, we never thought that you would actually hesitate and worry about this and that, like a cowardly little mouse. The way I see it, that Yue Clan third young master is nothing much, he's not even Heaven Rank. I can kill him with a punch, I really don't understand what are you guys afraid of!"

The leader of the group listened quietly, waiting for the other side to express his dissatisfaction, then slowly answered: "Do you know why you are just a party member and not a party leader? Do you know why your Palace Lord asked you to listen to my orders? The reason is simple. It's because I'm smarter than all of you! Don't even try to think with that pig brain of yours, you are not the expert in scheming, understand? The only thing you need to do is to shut your mouth and follow my plans exactly! Lastly, I want to say something. If Yue Clan third young master is so easy to deal with, why did our Lord ask your Palace Lord to form an alliance and share his profits with you guys? With his power and his brains, why didn't he just kill Yue Clan third young master personally and enjoy all of the benefits of the God's Ruins for himself? Did you think the ones sitting in your Palace Lord and our King's position are idiots who are not as smart as a pig brain like you?"

His calm and slow words were filled with disdain.

It was as if he was explaining about the simplest thing in the world, one that he did not expect to be refuted at all.

The other man seemed to be very angry, but was unable to refute because before they left, his Palace Lord had warned them with a strict tone that he never used before. He warned them that he would eliminate their whole clan if they dare to disobey orders and made a big mistake.

They did not want to implicate their whole clan from a single burst of anger. Furthermore, this leader was indeed a smart

person.

Their Palace Lord had even looked upon him favourably.

If it wasn't for the fact that the leader was forever loyal to that King of his, Palace Lord would definitely have given him a position as the Chief Elder. They, who were way behind the leader no matter power or intelligence, would naturally not dare to protest. However, after hearing the leader's disdainful tone, they were completely unable to calm their indignant hearts. Was this Yue Clan third young master really that powerful?

Even if he had a bounty of 100 million gold in the Heaven Realm, what did it signify?

In their party, who did not have a bounty of 100 million gold and above?

"Let's go, it's not good for us to stay too long. If Zhi Zun or Night Empress found us, it would be very troublesome. Maybe they would immediately be on alert and see through his majesty's plans straight away. Before his majesty's plans are realised, I don't want to reveal ourselves." The leader gave a final look at the lake before he and his party left.

He had some sort of feeling.

Just now, when Yue Clan third young master was jumping into the lake, it was as if he had given him a brief side glance.

Could it be that from such a distance, he was able to feel his presence? If that was true, then the Yue Clan third young master was really too frightening! This matter was of utmost importance. He must go back and report to his king. Maybe this could be the key to Yue Clan third young master's mystery! If his Majesty could see through Yue Clan third young master's mystery, their plans would at least be ten times easier to execute. It was a pity...

"Eh?" In that instant when the leader glanced at the lake, he saw that there was some kind of strange energy on the lake. It was as if

there was a huge explosion at the bottom of the lake. He immediately shouted in alarm: “Did the Yue Clan third young master discover the secret of the lake bottom so quickly? Not good, this Yue Clan third young master really had a special kind of eyes.”

“Maybe it was Ghost Genius’ Yue Gong’s Quintet Puppet Mice?” His comrade guessed uncertainly.

“Let’s hope that’s the case.” The party leader bitterly sighed: “Let’s hope this boy didn’t have an Inherent Skill like Omniscience. Otherwise it will be very troublesome..”

At the bottom of the lake, Yue Yang had summoned the Quintet Puppet Mice and found a special barrier.

If it was another person, he would definitely not dare to do anything rash to it.

However, Yue Yang who possessed Divine Vision Inherent Skill, immediately took out his Tao Tie Blade and tore the barrier apart.

The unknown barrier opened with a huge rumble, but didn’t break to pieces. Yue Yang had skillfully used his blade to accurately catch the perfect opportunity to stop the energy circulating around the barrier, like a grandmaster creating his masterpiece. The most amazing thing was that from an outsider’s perspective, Yue Yang had destroyed the barrier, not open it.

The two results were completely different.

When Yue Yang opened the barrier, he could observe, recall and duplicate the barrier through his Divine Vision before it disappears.

Destroying it wouldn’t produce such a result... Outsiders would never know that in the moment Yue Yang opened the barrier, it was like a lesson for him... Just like a thief that learned a new technique to unlock a magic lock. Without personal experience, one would never fully understand the full secrets of the technique.

Countless energy rushed out from the barrier and pervaded the

whole lake

A huge and ancient-looking teleportation portal appeared before Yue Yang.

Without waiting for Yue Yang to do anything, it suddenly lighted up. Countless Heaven Realm Dwarves that only existed in the Heaven Realm rushed out from the other side of the teleportation portal like torrential water.

Among these Heaven Realm Dwarves, there was Heaven Realm Goblin that was not very tall but was at least Earth Rank Level 3. He held a whip and was whipping the dwarves cruelly to form a certain formation according to a magic circle, as sacrifice for the Teleportation Portal. According to Yue Yang's judgement, this was an attempt to increase the output power of the Teleportation Portal through sacrifice offering, so that they would be able to receive a very strong Heaven Ranker.

“So it's like that... That's so interesting!” Yue Yang looked at the unceasing torrent of Heaven Realm Dwarves and those evil Heaven Realm Goblins, and smiled.

# Chapter 635 – Hell Hydra

---

There were many ways to offer a sacrifice.

Demon Abyss and Soaring Dragon Continent both had different ways. Of course, Heaven Stairway had a different method too.

The most direct way was Demon Abyss' method, which sacrificed lives, also known as Blood Sacrifice. It was the most cruel and ineffective way of sacrificing, but it could be used a lot of times under no strict restrictions. With regards to the Demon Abyss that possessed a huge amount of monsters, blood Sacrifice was something that the Demon Kings would willingly do. Soaring Dragon Continent, on the other hand, used Soul Sacrifice. Soul Sacrifice was achieved when a warrior willingly and selflessly contribute his soul... It could be said that Yue Shan's suicide to stop Black Hell King was a type of Soul Sacrifice. It was because of his Soul Sacrifice that Black Hell King's Betrayal Inherent Skill would lose its effectiveness momentarily, resulting in him being killed by Sky Execution.

The biggest difference between Soaring Dragon Continent and Demon Abyss, was that one was voluntary, and the other was forced.

Six thousand years ago, Prison Emperor used his life and soul to seal the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm.

This was also a type of sacrifice.

It was a more advanced, more powerful type called Heaven Earth Sacrifice.

It was also the sacrifice method that warriors from Heaven Stairway used most commonly. This Heaven Earth Sacrifice, not only requires the warrior to sacrifice voluntarily, but it also needed to sacrifice the lives of the living things around to become more powerful. When a Heaven Stairway warrior performs this, any

living thing in an enormous space that accepted the warriors will and guidance could join in. The power would become strong enough to destroy the world.

Yue Yang found that the Heaven Stairway was in complete chaos due to two reasons. The first reason was due to a great war.

The second reason was because a Heaven Stairway warrior had performed a Heaven Earth Sacrifice.

“Aoo aoo aoo...”

Those Heaven Realm Goblins that were exceptionally strong were preparing to kill a large number Heaven Realm Dwarfs as a Blood Sacrifice in the Ancient Teleportation Portal.

A golden arrow flew into the area and accurately shot down an Earth Rank Level 5 Heaven Realm Goblin Leader. In split seconds, that ugly and ferocious Goblin turned into a stone statue. If this shot was not enough to cause panic among the Heaven Realm Goblins, then the appearance of the Gold-ranked Level Eight Blood Python King would definitely intensify this panic. Stone Element Medusa who was standing beside Yue Yang, summoned the Gold Tiger Shark King and the Blood Python King.

The Stone Element Medusa had not allowed the Blood Python King to fight previously as it was in a weak state due to serious injuries and childbirth.

Today, the Blood Python King who had finally recovered couldn't wait to show off.

It was also a creature adept in water battles.

Under the terrorized gaze of the Heaven Realm Dwarf and Heaven Realm Goblin, the Blood Python King stretched out its long neck and directly bit the Earth Rank Level 4 Heaven Realm Goblin Warrior in place.

The power of the Blood Python King's giant bite could easily break the bones of the Goblin Warrior, but this was not enough to

satisfy the Blood Python King. When the Heaven Realm Goblin Warrior wanted to struggle free, the Blood Python King flung it away, forcefully slamming the body of the Goblin Warrior against one of the pillars of the Ancient Teleportation Portal.

Bang!

The Heaven Realm Goblin Warrior, who was half-dead, had no time to respond before the Blood Python King constricted its body against the pillar.

When the Blood Python King's huge body tightened around the Earth Rank Level 4 Goblin Warriors, its bones were fractured and broken, its internal organs burst into pieces, and blood starting oozing out from its eyes, nose, mouth and ears. It died in complete agony... Now the infant Gold-ranked Level 3 Blood Python Kings hiding behind their mother, a little timidly and bloodthirstily started to stick out their heads one by one. There were around 7-8 of them in total.

One of the Blood Python King's children had the fastest movement.

When the mother loosened the Goblin Warrior, it immediately opened its bloody mouth and rushed to swallow the Goblin Warrior's bloody corpse in one mouthful.

Although they were infants, they all grew very quickly. They were all ten meters long on average currently.

However, as compared to their mother, who was more than fifty meters long, they were only insignificant little snakes.

Seeing the Blood Python King showing its glorious power, the Gold Tiger Shark King most certainly dare not fall behind.

The Gold Tiger Shark King, who had devoured many varieties of strong monsters and fought many battles for a long time, had far surpassed the Blood Python King in terms of level and abilities. The Gold Tiger Shark King had reached Gold-ranked Level 10.

Although it was not able to upgrade its rank to Platinum, it continued to accumulate its combat power and had far exceeded the abilities of a normal Gold-ranked Level 10 monster. Yue Yang had no time to pay attention to it at the moment. Otherwise, if he tried to think of a way, he should be able to trigger the Gold Tiger Shark King to undergo variant evolution to become even stronger.

The importance of the Gold Tiger Shark King's cultivation certainly could not be compared with that of Hui Tai Lang. After all, its battle limitations were still restricted to water.

If it could fly in the sky like the Ancient Magic Sharks in the past, Yue Yang would naturally cultivate it more.

In another words, if it wanted to stand out from others, it needed to work even harder.

“Ahhh...”

With the continuous massacre spree of the Gold Tiger Shark King and the Blood Python King, the Heaven Realm Goblins, who were responsible for maintaining order, died one after another. In the end, none of them survived. Even if they kept appearing from the Teleportation Portal, they were not strong enough to defeat the two beasts. Yue Yang thought that those Heaven Realm Dwarves would flee in all four directions, but they actually did a completely different thing.

Those Heaven Realm Dwarves were terror-stricken. Not only did they not flee, they even knelt down.

Neatly mingled in a circle, waiting for Yue Yang's decisions for them.

They were very docile, totally unresisting and even lost their guts in escaping.

The Heaven Realm Goblins continued to be exterminated. Under the condition where there were no sacrifice offerings, the number of Heaven Realm Dwarves and Heaven Realm Goblins coming out



from the Ancient Teleportation Portal become lesser and lesser. After a long time, finally a Goblin Leader appeared, but it was immediately killed by the Blood Python King and Gold Tiger Shark King. There was no more movement after that. Yue Yang waved his hand and ordered those Heaven Realm Dwarves to move to the side and wait for him while he entered the Ancient Teleportation Portal together with Stone Element Medusa.

Yue Yang ordered the Gold Tiger Shark King and the Blood Python King to stay.

Standing on the Ancient Teleportation Portal, Yue Yang used a large number of magic crystals as an energy source to light up the teleportation portal pillars...

He was teleported instantly.

When Yue Yang and the Stone Element Medusa slipped out of the space time tunnel, they discovered themselves in a world of water.

In this peculiar water world, there was nothing but water. There was only a small island to get a foothold, and the surrounding was filled with Heaven Realm Dwarves and Heaven Realm Goblins.

The total number of population of these two races could be more than 100,000. The Heaven Realm Dwarves were stunned when they saw Yue Yang, the uninvited guest, but they bore no malice towards him. The ignorant Heaven Realm Goblins who liked to act recklessly, on the other hand, had actually decided to all jump towards Yue Yang in hostility. Hundreds and hundreds of Heaven Realm Goblins surrounded Yue Yang, to the point of covering the sky. Unfortunately, their status and strength were too low to pose a threat to Yue Yang.

“Eh?”

When Yue Yang prepared to kill those Heaven Realm Goblins with one move, he suddenly found that there was some kind of Code Power surrounding that place. It was not as obvious as the

Code Power in the Zodiac Temples, but it prevents grimoire owners from attacking. The strangest thing was the Code Power also restricted the use of weaponry in this water world.

Stone Element Medusa was stunned and immediately put away her bow and arrows. The flaming snakes in her head danced furiously.

A sharp sound resounded.

Her eyes shot out some kind of death-like beam, the kind that was able to attack souls directly.

This was the first time Yue Yang saw her use this special skill.

The Heaven Realm Goblins who saw her eyes fell into the water, head first, one by one... Before they even entered the water, their bodies had all turned in to stone statues. With his Divine Eyes, Yue Yang found out that those Heaven Realm Goblins did not immediately die. However, both their soul and body were severely damaged.

Unless Stone Element Medusa allowed them to revert, these Heaven Realm Goblins would never be able to return to their normal state.

The Stone Element Medusa did not forgive her enemies easily. She pointed her hands towards the petrified enemies and closed them.

Those petrified goblins broke into pieces and their souls annihilated with her move. As for what little life energy they had left, it was all extracted by Stone Element Medusa and gathered in her hands.

“Do you want to use these energy to level up your weapons?” Yue Yang, for the first time, found out that there was such a wonderful usage for life energy.

“En!” Stone Element Medusa nodded.

Stone Element Medusa's killing spree did not scare the enemy, but instead provoked the fierceness of these Heaven Realm Goblins.

They decided to rely on their large numbers. There was also an Earth Rank Level 6 Goblin King who was leading them. Those ugly and violent Heaven Realm Goblins, after a brief moment of being intimidated, became even crazier and rushed in fearlessly.

Because of the Code Power in the water world, these goblins did not use any weapons.

Moreover, they only had whips on their waists that were made from rubber. It could only be used to intimidate and banish those timid Heaven Realm Dwarves which did not have any hostility at all. With regards to the attack launched by these crazy Goblins, the Stone Element Medusa, who was fighting alone, appeared to be very angry. She felt that her dignity was challenged by the weak.

She was furious.

The snakes in her head, moved by themselves.

Those snakes that were supposedly fast asleep, opened their eyes and mouths, and revealed their fangs.

Numerous flame arrows came flying out from the mouths of the snakes.

With their mighty power, they easily shoot the Heaven Realm Goblins on the foreheads, directly causing their enemies' head to explode.

The most frightening thing was that these flame arrows were like snakes. They seem to had lifelike movement while following the commands of Stone Element Medusa. Even if an enemy avoided those flame arrows, they would follow their master's directions and automatically chase after the enemies. They would only disappear after hitting their target.

The Stone Element Medusa's flaming snake hair was actually

created from fake Nirvana Flame that she received from the [Copy] Law in the Gemini Temple.

After combining with Yue Yang's Heaven Fury Fire Lotus, Dark Cloud Sky Flames and Pure Blue Fire Form, Stone Element Medusa was finally able to control the fire ability that she could not control before. Her usual snake hair had turned to 'Pure Fire Snakes'. They would only burst into flames during battles or when Stone Element Medusa was angered. Of course, this was still not her final evolution form. Yue Yang hoped that one day she would be able to fuse with many other fire abilities, and created her very own unique 'Demon Fire'.

Raindrop-like ball of flames spurted out, causing the approaching Heaven Realm Goblins to be engulfed in fire.

All attacks from every directions were in vain. Even the most ferocious Heaven Realm Goblin would have lost their morale.

The Goblin King thought that the enemy in front of it was simply undefeatable. It immediately waved his hand and commanded his subordinates to recede into the water and retreat from the enemy for the moment.

It was thinking that fleeing into the water would help them break away from this terrible Medusa.

Little did it knew that water warfare was actually Stone Element Medusa's real strength.

"Eh?" The Stone Element Medusa, which was ready to chase down water, had discovered the enemy even earlier than Yue Yang. She immediately instinctively stopped in front of Yue Yang, eyes staring into the deep water.

"It is a Hell Hydra!" Yue Yang made a slight frown.

The Hell Hydra was not a creature from Tong Tian Tower, but a Heaven Realm creature. At Tong Tian Tower, the ordinary Hydra was only a Bronze-ranked monster. A small number of elites were

Silver-ranked and only the King Beast was Gold-ranked. The Hell Hydra was different from the normal Hydra. This monster was already Gold-ranked from the moment it was born. Furthermore, Elites and King types were Platinum-ranked the moment they were born. A small number of Hell Hydras who managed to survive for a long time could even become one of the Ten Calamity Beasts in Heaven Realm.

Amongst the Ten Calamity Beasts, the Heaven Realm Giant Dragon was the strongest, followed by the Ancient Demon.

Ancient Slaughterers, Hell Hydras, Dragon-eating Demon Spider, Evil Demon Eye, Thunder Winged Tiger, Flame Manticore King and so on were all on the list.

The number of Hell Hydras that could occupy the top five position in the Ten Calamity Beasts were not as many as the Heaven Realm Giant Dragons and the Ancient Demons. Having possessed a legionary level power, they could possess such a reputation because they were so fierce, greedy, cruel and violent.

The Hell Hydra that had emerged from the deep waters was as large as an island.

Furthermore, there was more than one.

There were as many as five, the strongest being Heaven Rank Level 5 and the weakest being Heaven Rank Level 3... Yue Yang really could not imagine this situation. How could there be such a strong monster sealed in the Heaven Stairway? Also, who was the one who sealed these Hell Hydras here? If only the five Hell Hydras were sealed here, why would they leave a Code that prohibited weapons?

# Chapter 636 – ‘Stand Straight’ and ‘Fortitude’

---

If the strongest sealed monster in this Water World was the Hell Hydra King, Yue Yang definitely would not believe it.

What he was most concerned about was this Hell Hydra King could be the subordinate or friend of some ancient being that just wouldn't die.

Just like that black bearded Mo Long who was sealed in the Death Boundary within the man-eating lake in the Southern Heaven Realm, the Ancient Demon Shark, Ancient Island Whale, Dragon Electric Eel and Cuttlefish King were also sealed together with him. These five Hell Hydras might just be the subordinates of some ancient monster, who knows? The Hell Hydra King seemed to have a certain intellect as it had a doubtful gaze when it saw Yue Yang and the Stone Element Stone Element Medusa.

The other four Hell Hydras were the complete opposite, especially the ones who just reached adulthood. They attacked Yue Yang and Stone Element Medusa the instant they saw them. Many gigantic heads spouted raging flames, icy frost, thunder, lightning, black fog and poison, all at the same time, charging towards their enemies ferociously.

Having a long history of battle, Stone Element Medusa was undaunted.

The level pressure was nothing to someone who was as intelligent as her.

She wanted to accept the battle but Yue Yang felt that carelessly starting the battle was the most foolish decision, since it might just be what the Ancient Demon King wanted.

“Let's go!” Yue Yang said, flying up high.

In this water world, flying was not restricted by the Code.

Even though Stone Element Medusa was not very good at flying, but as a Beast close to becoming a Holy Beast, floating in the sky would not be a problem for her.

Four Hell Hydras that were the size of small islands, spouted different attributes of attack towards Yue Yang and Stone Element Medusa, weaving up a fire net in the sky. If Stone Element Medusa was the only one, she might not be able to completely dodge the attacks. However, Yue Yang held her hand and skillfully got out of the fire net, escaping at a fast speed while keeping close to the water surface.

The Hell Hydras pursued relentlessly but soon realised that Yue Yang had left their attack range and disappeared, teleporting in an instant.

Having lost their target, they could only helplessly return back to their King's side.

The Hell Hydra King's eyes contained suspicion, as if it was thinking of something.

Responding quickly, it submerged underwater in a hurry. The four Hell Hydras could not understand what was happening, but they closely followed their king. At a depth of one kilometer underwater, the seabed was not in complete darkness. Rather, there was a peculiar scene. The seabed had countless glowing plants and animals, decorating the seabed brightly like the starry sky. Underneath some gigantic glowing plants shone as bright as the day.

There was nothing on the water surface, but the seabed was thriving with life, turning the place into an indescribably marvelous world.

Seeing the Hell Hydras swimming across the sea, all the fishes hid inside the reefs. Some of the glowing plants even shrunk into a lump.

However, the Hell Hydra King did not bother about the surrounding and went straight towards a huge underwater forest.

The size of the forest was unknown, every tree was old and at least a hundred meters tall.

After entering a distance of ten kilometers, a wide vacant land appeared.

An Ancient Seal, which was ten times bigger than the Ancient Teleportation Portal outside, appeared in the center of the vacant land in the forest, surrounded by ten crystal pillars. The Hell Hydra King returned to the center of the Ancient Seal, wanting to rest when suddenly its eyes suddenly opened. Looking towards the southeast direction, Yue Yang's silhouette appeared on top of a crystal pillar.

“Thanks for leading the way, I finally understood what was happening. “

Not waiting for the Hell Hydra King to get angry, Yue Yang immediately teleported away.

So much for the Ancient Teleportation Portal sacrificial offering, everything was all the Ancient Demon King's schemes. There were three parts to the Ancient Demon King's plan: First was to separate Yue Yang from his party and then get a hostage to drive him mad. Second, it would be to get Yue Yang to fight with Hell Hydra the moment he enter the Ancient Teleportation Portal. When both sides were exhausted, the Ancient Demon King would strike. Third, when Yue Yang killed the Hell Hydras that were guarding the place, he would provide the chance for the Ancient Demon King to release his companions... These Hell Hydras were the guards. Yue Yang did not know why they were guarding, but they were definitely guarding. The real monster was still sealed in the Ancient Seal, unable to escape!

Those Heaven Realm Goblins and Dwarves should be workers that were providing food to the Hell Hydras.



It could be that the Ancient Demon King convinced the Heaven Realm Goblins, so when the sacrifice begins they would drive away the Heaven Realm Dwarves.

If Yue Yang did not arrive, these Heaven Realm Dwarves would have all escaped and the Hell Hydras would have no one to support them. They will then leave the seal in search for food, letting the Ancient Demon King have his way.

Returning to the water surface once more, Yue Yang immediately asked Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon to search the whole isle on this water world separately, killing the Heaven Realm Goblins above. Only through getting rid of the Heaven Realm Goblins, the Heaven Realm Dwarves would be able to stay in this water world for the time being. Considering the dwarves were very well tamed, they would not leave this water world.

Inside Yue Yang's heart, he had a strong premonition that after this small secret battle, there would be a huge war waiting for him.

Due to this, he let Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and the others to rest temporarily so that they would be in their best form for the huge war.

The Ancient Demon King definitely would not be an easy enemy. What other tricks did he have up his sleeves?

Yue Yang was waiting patiently, so that he would be able to adapt.

“Hahahhaha...”

On the other side of the battlefield, Ye Kong who was under the effect of the curse, started laughing maniacally as if he could not bear the pressure and turned into a madman.

The demonified Bai Yun Fei, beastified Xue Qian Ren and insectified Xue Qian Qiu all felt puzzled.

They guessed that Ye Kong had some sort of Inherent Skill which

would give him immunity or help weaken curses, which explained why he was laughing so proudly. Bai Yun Fei used his demonic claws to slash the back of his hands, but it did not crack since he had demonic scales to protect his skin. The back of Ye Kong's hand splattered with blood, since the Substitution Curse was still in effect. When Ye Kong stopped laughing and looked towards Bai Yun Fei, Bai Yun Fei and the gang felt startled. What they saw were a pair of blind eyes, there were no colors and emptiness in his eyes, exactly the same as a blind person.

Immunity to curses had never been Ye Kong's Inherent Skill.

Moreover, Ye Kong had not contracted his grimoire for too long. Even if his Inherent Skill was very powerful, it would not be able to be nullify the power of a Holy-ranked Artifact.

"You are just a clown, who are you trying to scare?" Bai Yun Fei used strength to beat up his body. He didn't seem to feel any pain, but Ye Kong, on the other hand, was very beat up as if hundreds of mammoth were trampling his body. His body was dented, bones were cracked, nose bleeding and some of his skin had been charred, revealing dripping wounds.

"Bai Yun Fei, you weakling, can't you use more power? I'm very disappointed, was this all you had?" Ye Kong wiped away the blood on his nose and mouth softly, staring at Bai Yun Fei with a look of disdain.

"Nonsense!" Bai Yun Fei was triggered. Due to the demonification, he might have received a slight sense of regret with his body, causing the words to really hurt his feelings.

He almost went into berserk state to beat himself up ruthlessly.

It was completely a masochistic and self-harming act.

Bai Yun Fei knew that this sort of action would have double effect on the body of Ye Kong and would have no effect on his own body.

The rest watched silently. No one dared to stop them. The Xue

Qian Ren and Xue Qian Qiu wanted to watch a good show, while Xue Tan Lang had a cold expression on his face. The unusual part was that Fatty Hai and Li brothers looked as if they were watching a good show. Bai Yun Fei hurt himself to the extent where he felt a faint pain and his bones were about to break. If there was no substitution curse, he believed what he have done would have brought about serious damage to his body. He stopped and looked at Ye Kong, feeling that he would probably see Ye Kong in a horrible and pitiful state.

However, he was disappointed.

Ye Kong was still standing on his feet.

Though covered with scars and bruises, his facial expression remained contempt.

He did not bother about the injuries on his body and spat on the ground: “You don’t even have the power to beat people up yet you are still pretending? If you keep this pretense up, you must be an idiot! ”

“No, this is impossible!” Bai Yun Fei flew into a rage. He knew his own strength. He could cut through mountains and break stones. He had hit himself hundreds of times. Let alone a human’s body, even a golden mammoth would have long been killed. Why did Ye Kong look fine? Why was the damage he received less than before?

“Before you die, I will tell you the answer.” Blind and bloody, Ye Kong forced himself towards Bai Yun Fei step by step.

“Get lost!” Bai Yun Fei’s claws flew.

The strength of his claws can completely tear apart Ye Kong’s body into shreds.

His speed was even more unparalleled. However, a strange thing happened. Ye Kong’s body had more claw wounds, but the damage was not serious. On the contrary, the damage became even weaker.

No matter how much Bai Yun Fei increased his strength, the damage still become weaker. In the end, Bai Yun Fei was exhausted and gasped for breath non-stop. Ye Kong was still standing in front of him, perfectly fine: “Are you done yet? You can continue if that wasn’t enough! How dare you show off with the likes of your strength and naivety!”

Bai Yun Fei stepped back powerlessly and looked at Ye Kong in horror.

Xue Qian Ren was unwilling to give up.

Waving his flaming claws, he advanced with Xue Qian Qiu, frantically attacking Ye Kong at the same time.

Ye Kong had completely no intention to resist. Xue Qian Qiu and Xue Qian Ren became exhausted after attacking Ye Kong, yet they noticed he was still fine and standing. There was almost no damage on his body, there were just superficial wounds, not even his internal organs were damaged .

Xue Qian Qiu shot a tentacle with barbed teeth, trying to bite Ye Kong’s face and destroying it.

However, the tentacles bit for a long time but only managed to leave a few teeth marks.

“Impossible!” Xue Qian Qiu and Xue Qian Ren were astonished that this kind of defensive force actually existed in this world. Could his Inherent Skill be a defensive Inherent Skill? But if that was true, he should be immune to wounds, yet he was covered with cuts and bruises. Before Bai Yun Fei and gang could think of an answer, Ye Kong suddenly waved his fist without waiting for them to finish thinking.

A meteor-like punch streak across the short distance, accurately aiming towards Bai Yun Fei, Xue Qian Qiu and Xue Qian Ren...

Bai Yun Fei’s reaction time was the fastest, when the fist hit him, he was already fifty meters away.

Xue Qian Qiu have a sharp reaction time. He tried to receive the punch while stepping back, thus eliminating the power of this punch which did not seem powerful to him. However, after receiving the punch, he staggered one step and fell to the ground with his eyes turned white.

A huge fist print was engraved deeply on his chest.

Ye Kong currently only had the power of a Heaven Rank Level 1, it should be impossible for him to release such such a terrifying punch.

“Why?” Bai Yun Fei was still pondering over this matter as he bent over to throw up wildly. The pain was making him unable to think deeper, he felt that his internal organs were almost crushed and were in pieces, the pain could hardly be described.

This was the power of Ye Kong’s punch? An Innate Level 1 against an peak Innate Level 3, how was Ye Kong able to hit him till he vomited blood?

“That’s because he has the ‘Stand Straight’ Inherent Skill and the Guardian Beast ‘Fortitude’.” Fatty Hai laughed: “I am sorry. As his boss, I did not introduce him to you. My little brother, Ye Kong, is not afraid to be beaten. You might not know it but his life is lowly, just like Hui Tai Lang. The more he was beaten the more spirited he gets. In the battlefield, he would always stand straight and would never fall. If you didn’t hit him, he may fall, but the more you hit him, the more his damages will accumulate, and the more powerful his Inherent Skill’s power would be.

As for his Special-type Guardian Beast Fortitude, he is just like his master. The more you beat him, the stronger he gets. The stronger he gets, the stronger his return attack will be. Do you understand why I’m explaining to you? Because there is another person here with an Inherent Skill that gains power the more depressed our enemies become. If he had a big mouth, all of you would have died ten times already!”

“Enough of your nonsense.” Xue Tan Lang increased his power and shouted coolly, “Hurry and send them on their way! “

# Chapter 637 – Pearls Falling Onto A Jade Plate

---

Phoenix Fairy Beauty led Hai Ying Wu, Yue Bing, Yue Yu, and the Drunken Cat Big Sis to another Ancient Seal location.

However, there no one could be seen close to the Ancient Seal.

Could it be some kind of plot?

Had they fallen into a trap?

“Everyone pay more attention. Something is wrong.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty pulled Yue Yu and Yue Bing to her side her to protect them. Hai Ying Wu had summoned her Golden Three Headed Dragon and let it search the surroundings. In truth Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s perception was able to cover 10 kilometers, nothing inside could escape it. However, 10 kilometers was a very short distance for Rankers, as they could appear in a flash. It could not guarantee their safety, but it could at the very least prevent ambushes.

“There is also a possibility that there really is no one here. After all, the enemy numbers are not enough to reach every place. Splitting up too much would be suicidal as they would decrease their fighting strength. It was much more plausible for this to be a misinformation to split up our forces and lure the lion away from the territory.” Hai Ying Wu judged.

“There is also a chance that the main target of the enemy is us.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty became unsettled as her heart sank.

“Since we are here, then we definitely have to fight to the end.” Yue Bing’s expression was filled with determination. After going through Yue Yang’s guidance and gaining battle experience, she had changed from a stubborn girl to a qualified warrior.

The current her was filled with unbendable confidence and energy.

It was totally different from her previously depressed self.

Actually, separating from Yue Yang this time was all due to her suggestion. She did not want to always be under her brother's protection. She wanted to stand up and fight for her brother and become his strength. To do these, she needed to become strong. She knew that fighting was dangerous, but in order to obtain more experience, she let go of all her hesitation.

Yue Yu, the girl who was as gentle as water, also had the same thoughts.

Hai Ying Wu looked at the Drunken Cat Big Sis and Niu Niu the little Panda Girl, then asked Phoenix Fairy Beauty, "When will the people from Demonic Palace arrive?"

Phoenix Fairy Beauty knit her brows, "They might have already arrived, but they are in battle..... Sky Wrath, Sky Calamity, Sky Disaster and the others would absolutely be not slower than us."

The fact that Sky Wrath, Sky Crime, Sky Fury and Sky Disaster hadn't arrived showed how serious the situation was.

Should they wait or search ahead?

Everyone looked at Phoenix Fairy Beauty, waiting for her decision.

Yue Yang was not there, so she was the strongest and the one with the most fighting experience. Listening to her was not a wrong choice.

"We wait!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty decided to stay after pondering. Searching for it did not mean that they would find it. There was also a huge chance for things to go wrong. Another reason for doing this is to prevent the enemy from offering sacrifices, which is another plan to lure the tiger away from its territory. The final reason, if Sky Wrath and the others could not stop the enemy, then going there to support them would not really help that much. If they could handle it, then waiting here was better.



Phoenix Fairy Beauty chose to believe her comrades.

Yue Yu, Yue Bing and the others also chose to believe Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

After waiting for around an hour, a group of people finally entered Phoenix Fairy Beauty's perception.

They were Sky Fury who was drenched in blood, Sky Crime who had a hole through his lungs, Sky Sword who had fainted and carried by Sky Assassinate, Sky Disaster whose clothes had been torn to shreds but received the least injury, Sky Calamity who could not turn invisible anymore, and Sky Wrath who was indifferent to his injuries.

The people from Demonic Palace finally arrived, but they were wounded.

They had already fought quite hard before arriving.....

"Please excuse us for being late. Nothing could be done about the traffic jam." Sky Crime joked. This was a joke that he learned from Yue Yang. Everytime Yue Yang arrived late, he would find all kinds of excuses, such as traffic jams.

"How many did you fight to get into such a situation?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt pain, especially after seeing Sky Disaster's tragic appearance. However, she did not show it and even teased her about it, as if her comrades were not impressive enough and made her disappointed. The people from Demonic Palace knew her temper, so they laughed and found a place to sit down. Only Sky Disaster threw herself into Phoenix Fairy Beauty's embrace as she acted like a spoiled child.

"There was a problematic Heaven Ranker in the other party." Sky Wrath, who had been surpassed by Phoenix Fairy Beauty in the Demonic Palace Rankings, warned her.

"No wonder. It will be alright now, it's not like I haven't killed Heaven Rankers before." Phoenix Fairy Beauty's eyes shone with

fury. Whoever dared to touch Demonic Palace must be killed even if they were Heaven Ranked!

After ten minutes, a group of people appeared.

This was the Black Hell Army's Thunder Corps.

Leading them was Thunder of the Center. He was the commander that plotted against the Wyvern Valley.

Among the five commanders of the Black Hell Army, this Thunder of the Center was the strongest. He controlled the Thunder Corps and even the corps that had been left behind by War Tiger and Fierce Tooth after their deaths.

However, he was only a Level 9 Innate and not the strongest person in the entire war.

The strongest was a group of mercenaries that had never appeared in the Tong Tian Tower before.

In Heaven Realm, this mercenary group could not even enter the top 1000, but in Tong Tian Tower, their strength could even overturn the Demonic Palace.

In this mercenary group, there were actually two Heaven Rankers. Although they were both at Heaven Rank Level 1, they could already do whatever they want in Tong Tian Tower. Let alone these two Heaven Rankers, even their thirteen subordinates, who were nothing much in Heaven Realm, were all above Earth Rank Level 7.

Three of them were Earth Rank Level 9, four at Level 8, and six as Level 7.

Their strength was comparable to Tong Tian Tower's entire Guang Ming Continent or even the Hei An Continent. Nobody would even dare to criticize them. Unfortunately, they were not satisfied. They came to the first level of Heaven Stairway to covet God's Ruins. This decision had sealed their fate.

“The Tong Tian Tower is not bad. There are many beautiful women and every one is extremely weak. Everyone would cower at our presence. Hahahaha, everything that person said was correct. This place is truly a good place. Since this is such a good place, then it should not be occupied by such incompetent people. Tong Tian Tower should belong to us. Its natural resources, women, treasures, everything should belong to us, the strong. Although we suffered a bit from coming here, it was all worth it.” The mercenary captain looked at Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Hai Ying Wu, Yue Yu, Yue Bing and the others with desire in his eyes.

“How could cowards become Heaven Rankers? Could it be that Heaven Realm specialised in producing idiots?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty shook her head and sighed.

“Hahahaha!” The people in the mercenary group did not get angry at her words. On the contrary, they even laughed.

In their eyes, the beauty in front of them was already in the bag.

The only question they have was how they would split it.

The vice captain was a Bear-man with overflowing muscles. His strength was at Heaven Rank Level 1 and was only a bit weaker than the captain. This Bear-man was probably from the same tribe as the Three-eyed Tiger that Yue Yang was acquainted with. In front of Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the others, he carried an honest looking appearance and spoke, “Beauties, don’t be scared. We are actually the good guys. As long as you are obedient, we would not harm a hair on your bodies! We, the Charging Wolves Mercenary, have come here after receiving an invitation. Our goal is to keep the peace of Tong Tian Tower. We are fighting for justice. If there is some kind of misunderstanding between us, we can slowly discuss over it, and settle it with discussion.”

“I cannot imagine what there is to talk about with a coward.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty disdainfully sneered.

“Sis, something is wrong. The Heaven Ranker that we saw

weren't these two." Sky Disaster hurriedly warned Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

"Got it. That bastard is hiding himself. He thought that others could not see his disgusting appearance, truly a disgrace."

A bolt of lightning that carried the power of judgement was shot to midair.

After moving a hundred meters, the lightning struck empty space, and it began to shatter.

A crooked nosed, wide mouthed, small eyed man wearing a top hat and bizarre clothes appeared. He jumped out from empty space. He wanted to confidently escape the lightning, but he never imagined that he would make a lapse in judgement. The power of judgement had numbed his fingers and made his body tremble. If he was not at the peak of Heaven Rank Level 2, he might have already become a charcoal man.

If Yue Yang was here, then he would be able to immediately recognize this person from his badge. This person was the Heaven Ranked Expert in the Clown's group.

"Careful. That man is an expert in illusions." Sky Wrath warned Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Although she was currently at Heaven Rank Level, there were three Heaven Rankers on the other side. Moreover, the Ancient Demon King was probably hiding and preparing for an ambush.

Whatever the case, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, as the backbone of the group, cannot have anything bad happen to her.

Her existence was a deterrent against the enemy.

At the same time, she was also the basis of her comrades' confidence.

If she falls, then the consequences that Yue Yu, Yue Bing and the others would face was too horrible to contemplate.

“Don’t worry. Nothing will happen to me. Nothing will happen to us.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not believe that the enemy could defeat her easily. So what if there were three Heaven Rankers? She had enough confidence that she could not be defeated even by the Ancient Demon King as long as he had not regained his full power.

Sky Law had self confidence, because under Zhi Zun’s guidance, her advancements were huge.

Moreover, she had performed Double Body Fusion with Yue Yang, became reborn under Nirvana Flames. Her Guardian Beast, Charm Demon Queen, had leveled up to become a Divine Beast. In the end, she had even fought in the Death Arena and even Heaven Realm. She was even amazed at her own improvements. If the abnormal Yue Yang was not in front of her, then she would become more arrogant. While she was comprehending the powers of Sky Law and the Innate Elder Realm, she had received guidance from her sister and Night Empress. Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s will became a hundred times resolute than before, and she was even able to gradually form her Innate Elder’s Heart.

The sound of pipa suddenly echoed from the far east.

This sound was like pearls falling onto a jade plate.

“On the yellow sand, on the lush green plains, our troops set forth, singing courageously. Looking around the millions of men, I noticed a few of my age. Carrying our flags and banners, whipping our horses, watching our comrades’ back as the sun sets across the horizon. Away from home, we slept on a faraway mountain....The general led the attack, fire beacons were set off continuously..... “

The wind suddenly stopped.

A beautiful woman appeared in the still sky like a fairy falling into the world. Her clothes fluttered as she flew down.

Everyone listened to her outstanding performance, forgetting everything else.

Her beautiful voice had especially reverberated, giving off an intoxicating feeling.

The entire Thunder Corps was totally oblivious that they had been captivated by the beautiful sound of the pipa as they quietly listened. Even the three Heaven Rankers from Heaven Realm, who had kept up their guard, couldn't help open their mouths as they listened to her voice. They stared at her blankly as she moved down. Wherever she walked, the soldiers would be placed into eternal rest as they fell down the ground...

## Chapter 638 – Next will be your turn!

---

“It’s you?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty frowned her eyebrows. Actually, she already knew that the Southern Goblin King would come here to battle, but she never thought that she would be support her instead of directly looking for Yue Yang.

“I didn’t miss any exciting battles right?” Southern Goblin King waved her hand lightly, her fingers stroking her pipa softly.

The tinkling sound were as beautiful as the sound of heavens.

Another tinkling sound resounded.

It was so beautiful and fresh like spring water dripping within one’s heart, making one drunk from the music.

Thunder of the Center slowly opened his eyes wider and wider, realising that this pipa sound was actually a deadly attack!

A round of sound wave very obviously rushed towards him. With his skills, he was naturally able to defend against it. However, his personal guards started vomiting blood one by one in the midst of this soul crushing music. Just now, he was already very angry when the Southern Goblin King came and killed more than a hundred of his men. If it wasn’t because they had carefully laid a plan that made him unable to interfere in the matter now, he would have gone berserk. Right now, Southern Goblin King had actually provoked him again with her Sound Wave attack, killing more than a dozen of his personal guards by rupturing their internal organs.

The worst part was that even in death, his personal guards were still strangely wearing an expression of bliss from the beautiful music, as if they were unaware that their internal organs have ruptured.

The Charging Wolves Mercenary Captain actually clapped his hands and laughed, “What a beautiful sound! What a graceful way

to kill your enemies. It's really a pleasant surprise."

Southern Goblin King said with a winning smile, "There is an even bigger surprise later!"

Not waiting for Thunder of the Center to speak, she moved both of her hands quickly, like violent wind and rainstorm.

The originally beautiful and moving pipa sound suddenly changed to become clanging, exciting and resounding, as if millions of soldiers were marching on a battlefield.

Even those slow witted people who did not understand music could almost see a band of soldiers marching. At the orders of the commander, they neatly surged forth, sweeping towards the enemies. The scene really made people filled with uncontrollable passion as their blood boiled. Look, the battle flag fluttered, flying in front of the army, leading the soldiers to charge forward; Listen, the battle drums sounded, horseshoes clapped, shaking the ground with great force, till the color of the sky started to change... They were greeted by a rain of ten thousand arrows, greeted by erected pikes. Those soldiers that had been killed did not stop moving as they fearlessly charged forward..

Those who were killed collapsed on the ground.

The invincible army did not stop moving even if their horses stomped the corpses of their comrades .....

The entire place was enveloped by Southern Goblin King's deathly music. Members of the Thunder Corps listened to the music, and one by one collapsed on the ground., Some looked like their foreheads were struck by arrows, some looked like a pike had struck through their hearts, some looked like they had been trampled by horses. Their deaths were similar to the soldiers in her song. Their souls quietly roared and died one by one starting from the weakest of them.

Those who were slightly stronger bitterly braced themselves, but



following the change in the music, they had already become drunk to the point that they could not free themselves.

If, at this moment, Thunder of the Center stood out and shouted loudly, he might have been able to break the music and save them.

Very sadly, the current Thunder of the Center, was also immersed in the music. Even if he used his fingers to cover his ears, he could not stop his soul from resonating. It was not only Thunder of the Center, the Charging Wolf Mercenary Group members, even their captain and vice captain could not avoid from falling into the the Music Mirage.

The first person to break free from the Music Mirage was the guy with the tall hat from the clown group.

He did not speak up to disturb the Southern Goblin King performance.

The first reason was because he loved music and could not bare to break this kind of soul shaking natural music. Secondly, the members of the Thunder Corps were to be turned in to sacrifices as part of the plan. Borrowing the enemy's hand to kill them would not even make Thunder of the Center feel disgust. Although he didn't care about the opinions of Thunder of the Center, he still needed to rely on him in offering the sacrifice for the Ancient Seal, and also rely on him for searching through God's Ruins. Thirdly, Sky Law was on the other side, and currently charging her terrifying Sky Law Lightning. Once he breaks the Southern Goblin King's music that terrifying Sky Law Lightning would definitely land on his head.

What reason did he have to take on this lightning in place of the Charging Wolf Mercenary Group?

The Charging Wolf Mercenary Group was originally meant to be the scapegoat!

The tall-hat man didn't speak. He just remained in silence, slowly

backing up, seeking the most safest distance to avoid Sky Law's attack..... He cleverly moved Sky Law's killing intent from him and pushed it onto the Charging Wolf Mercenary Group Captain.

Under the situation where no one disturbed her performance, Southern Goblin King continued playing without any impatience as she played slowly.

The rhythm slowed down, just like the short period of peacefulness after a violent storm..... Listening to this part of performance made people almost see fresh red blood spilling across the sky. After the violent storm was over, bloodthirsty rampaging soldiers, fell to the ground. Their corpses scattered all over the mountains and fields, the battlefield was particularly bleak. Surviving soldiers in the piles of corpses slowly began to crawl their way out.

They did not cheer. They only sat on the high high hills of corpses numbly, eyes looking bleak with no source of energy in sight.

The sky started to rain. Biting coldness and the blood stained evening wind moved through the battlefield. The blood of many people formed creeks and converged into blood pools.

Other than the flapping flag, nothing else was alive or able to move.

Darkness began to descend.

Dark Clouds covered the skies hiding the moon, like the soldiers' overcast hearts.

Bleak, painful breeze swept across the battlefield. The rain in the sky gradually became pieces of broken snow. Cold wind kept caressing, as if like it could blow to the distant homeland.

Countless white haired parents, countless dependent and hopeful wives, silently weeped. They will eternally not be able to hope for the return of their loved ones. Only those children who could not

comprehend worry would smile happily under the lamp and ask seconds from their mother, unaware that what they ate was the last of their food supply..... The elderly parents were filled with anxiety, while their daughter-in-laws pretended to be happy to console them, but secretly cry at the deep darkness of the night when no one was aware.

Great amounts of snow began to conceal the bloody battle field.... A few old soldiers who barely survived moved through the snow one step at a time.

From time to time, some would fall to the ground and sleep for eternity.

The last remaining troops to return, was left with only a single person. The solitary figure gradually moved further and further away in the snow.

Until daybreak, when the sun rises from the east, everyone could see that the last person wasn't able to walk out of the boundless snow. He had long been turned into an ice statue, but his eyes were looking in the direction of his hometown..... Behind that ice statue was a trail of blood-coloured footprints. The cold wind blew hard between the sky and the earth losing all vitality.

“Huff, huff!” When Thunder of the Center, this lizard awakened from the music, he realised his body had been frozen and became hard as wood. There were even frost on his face, and the breath that came out from him was white vapour.

He couldn't believe that he, who was an Innate Level 9, was unable to defend against this music illusion. What would happen to his subordinates?

When he turned around, the only thing he could see was a field of white ice statue.

The whole Thunder Corps that consists of thousands of elites had all been turned into ice statues.

Other than a small number of Innate Rankers who barely managed to survive, the rest of the army was annihilated!

“No, ah no!”

Thunder of the Center miserably cried out, grabbing his own chest tightly.

It was the first time in his life that his heart felt this painful!

It was the first time he felt despair.

The pain he felt was as worse as when he heard the news of Black Hell King’s death.

Even though commander Thunder of the Center was already in high alert and blocked his ears, he never thought that Southern Goblin King’s Music Mirage would still resonate with his soul, and would still be able to cause his body to trigger a reaction. Immersed in the Music Mirage, he was unable to stop himself to indulge in the music. The thing that made Thunder of the Center despair the most was that because Southern Goblin King had released two sound waves attack previously, he mistakenly underestimated her true strength. He thought that he would be able to defend against her music attack. Who would have guessed that when she released her ultimate attack, the whole Thunder Corps would be annihilated!

If the Thunder Corps was annihilated by a Heaven Ranker like Sky Law, Thunder of the Center wouldn’t feel such regret. But Southern Goblin King was just a girl who was his equal in terms of level.

Why did it had to be her that annihilated his army with one attack, the army that he spent hundreds of years to train?

Thunder of the Center was so angry his lungs almost burst.

“Kill!” He charged towards Southern Goblin King. Whatever battle skills, rules and schemes, he didn’t want to give a damn anymore.

In his heart, he only wanted to eliminate the woman who annihilated his army.

She must die by his hands!

Southern Goblin King who was holding her Jade Pipa floated in the air with a little disdainful look on her face.

She was like an angel descending on earth.

Her movements were as beautiful as a dream.

Even when she was dodging Thunder of the Center's angry, fatal attacks, it looked like she was dancing in the air.

She knew that she was not as strong as Sky Law, but annihilating the Thunder Corps and luring the angry Lizard Commander was still something that she could do. As for fighting those three Heaven Rankers, she would leave it to Sky Law. She had no chances on fighting those kind of enemies at the moment.

Just like they initially planned, Southern Goblin King, who lured Thunder of the Center away to alleviate her comrades' burden, quickly disappeared into the horizon.

Thunder of the Center pursued hurriedly.

The two people quickly disappeared from the battlefield.

Sky Wrath, Sky Calamity and the other Demonic Palace members looked at each other in fear!

Fortunately this Southern Goblin King was not their enemy. Otherwise, they would have a big headache. Who would have a way to escape the Music Mirage? Southern Goblin King was only Innate Level 9 currently. If she ranked up to Heaven Rank and achieved enlightenment to the Innate Elder Realm, and used her Sound Wave attack then, would there be anyone in this world that could be her opponent? Even if there was, there would only be a handful of them!

The Eastern Goblin Tribe was definitely not an easy opponent, it

was no wonder that their race was known as the strongest race in Tong Tian Tower.

“Not bad, I liked it very much.” The Charging Wolf Mercenary Group’s captain who came from the Heaven Realm pretended to wave his hand in a relaxed manner. In reality, he, a Heaven Ranker, was also trapped within the Music Mirage just now.

Fortunately his enemies didn’t take that chance to attack him. Otherwise, he would really be embarrassed.

In order to conceal the fact that he lost control of his soul just now, he decided to show some moves.

The Thunder Corps annihilation had perfectly fit the sacrifice offering requirements to activate the Ancient Teleportation Portal. He pointed his fingers, imitating Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s posture just now. A burst of Heaven Rank energy streaked across the ground, creating a trench that was hundreds of metres long, 2 metres wide and 3 metres deep from him all the way to the edge of the Ancient Seal. At the same time, he had also snapped his finger confidently, creating flames with his finger that enveloped the whole battlefield, quickly thawing the thousands of ice statues that Southern Goblin King created.

A river of blood that had been thawed flowed through the trench.

Slowly, it flowed towards the Ancient Seal... Although the results wouldn’t be as effective as sacrificing the lives on top of the Ancient Seal itself, it would still be better than making it go to waste!

“Let’s add your blood too!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s figure disappeared and reappeared right behind the Charging Wolf Mercenary Captain’s back. The three Heaven Rankers started their attacks altogether. That Mercenary Captain seemed to have predicted this, he slashed his earth splitting sharp claws to attack Phoenix Fairy Beauty back. The Bear-man Vice Captain let out a strong punch that would definitely crush Phoenix Fairy Beauty if it

hit. The tall-hat man was even faster than the other two. Like a ghost, his corpse-like green fingers drenched in poison stabbed Phoenix Fairy Beauty in the back.

“You’ve fallen into our trap!” That Mercenary Captain smirked. The glee of successfully trapping his enemy shone in his eyes.

“Die!”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s answer was only that one word.

She didn’t avoid nor disappear, instead, she reached out her hands and pushed a burst of energy into the enemies’ head... Due to the deadly attacks by the three Heaven Rankers, she was immediately sent flying, her body creating a parabolic path as she fell from the air. When she got back up on her feet, her body was slightly trembling. There were ten stab wounds on her back, slash wounds on both her shoulders, and her left arm was dripping with fresh blood.

However, everyone was still looking at Sky Law with surprise in their eyes, as if they couldn’t believe what had happened.

They were shocked, not because of her wounds, but because of her terrifying killing potential!

The Charging Wolves Mercenary Captain from Heaven Realm was an unbridled Heaven Ranker.

Amidst everyone’s dumbstruck gazes, his head exploded into pieces!

Soul Annihilation!

Instant kill!

The corpse that had lost its head fell to the ground, splashing blood all over the place! The most terrifying thing was that the fellow didn’t even realise that he had died. Before his head exploded, he was still smiling arrogantly because he thought that he had successfully trapped his enemy... As for Phoenix Fairy

Beauty who had just instantly killed a strong enemy, she simply wiped the blood at the corner of her mouth unperturbed. Charmingly, she charged towards the Bear-man Vice Captain with a beautiful yet deathly smile: “Next will be your turn!”



# Chapter 639 – Look, This Is Power Derived From Wrath

---

Gudon!

After he saw that that the Captain was killed in a single stroke from the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, the Vice Captain was just stunned and all he could do was just to swallow his saliva, his eyes showing intense fear.

Actually it was not only him, the entire Charging Wolf Mercenary Group members were scared half to death.

The Heaven Realm warrior were crying out in fear!

Looks like the people from the Tong Tian Tower were also not to be trifled with. Otherwise, why would the Western Heaven Realm take so much trouble in closing up the door to Heaven Realm and seal it up? Fortunately, there wasn't another person similar to the Prison Emperor, else the Charging Wolf Mercenary Group coming here to Tong Tian Tower was merely to deliver some dishes.

The tall-hat man was secretly pleased that the captain of the Charging Wolf Mercenary Group was dead. It did not matter since he was just supposed to be the scapegoat anyway.

However, it was obvious that the Sky Law energy could not be maintained for an indefinite amount of time. After each use, it would require a lengthy period for her to recover and be able to use it again. Charging Wolf Mercenary Group Captain died, he did not die in vain. At least indirectly he saved the tall-hat man and kept him from harm. As long as Sky Law used her power to kill the Bear-man, then her power should be depleted by a lot. The tall-hat man might even be able to obtain the final victory....the tall-hat man found that the original plan was not executed as per plan, though there were some variations, the overall scheme had not deviated by much. Since his allies were all dead now, as long as he

was still alive, that would be alright.

“Forward, everyone attack.....”

The Bear-man found that Phoenix Fairy Beauty was staring at him and he felt a shudder went through him. Immediately he instructed the other members to attack, thus distracting her in the process.

He must obtain hostages to keep his life.

Else, the Charging Wolf Mercenary Group Captain would not be the only one to fall that way.

Before the entire Charging Wolf Mercenary Group rushed forward, the people from the Demonic Palace already charged forth to do a preemptive attack. Only Sky Disaster faced off against the three vice commanders of the Thunder Corps. These three vice commanders came from Thunder, War Tiger, and Fierce Tooth's armies. Each of them were perhaps Innate Level 6 and might even possibly be Level 7 Rankers.

Three of them ganged up for the attack, the power that they muster was no small matter.

Sky Disaster was almost immediately caught up in a tough battle.

There were also a few Demon Abyss Rankers, all possibly Innate Rankers, and they charged toward Drunken Cat Big Sis, Yue Yu and Yue Bing.

They had placed the hatred they had from Southern Goblin King killing their entire army onto their heads. Moreover, Yue Shan had killed the Black Hell King, and Yue Clan Third Young Master winning the Death Arena had indirectly caused the deaths of War Tiger of The East and Fierce Tooth of the North. They all certainly did not have any good feelings for the Yue Clan.

“Do you think that with the Innate title you will be able to defeat us? You are so wrong!” Without any fear, Drunken Cat Big Sis used her full power and headed straight into the battle. She had been

oppressed by Yue Yang and gained a lot of battle experience. She had previously held Innate Rankers in reverence, but now, the ones she was fighting against were Innates!

Innate Level 1, Innate Level 2, what were they worth?

When she used to practice with Yue Yang, he used at least Innate Levels four or five strength level to oppress her, Innate Levels one or two was really nothing much to look at really!

Before the battle began, Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl carefully wrapped up her favourite sweet bean cake with her handkerchief, which was specially made for her by Fourth Mother, so nothing must be wasted. After she had properly kept the sweet bean cake, she faced her opponents, made a stance, and use her feminine voice to call out, “Thank you for waiting, Niu Niu is now ready, let’s battle!”

On the opposite side, the Demon Abyss Ranker thought that it would be easy to be fool her, and made a plan, “Little girl, why don’t we both sit down and share some candy, I have a lot of them and they are all very sweet. I will share them with you!”

“Thank you, Niu Niu cannot accept anything from the bad guy!” Niu Niu The Little Panda Girl was full of principle. However, on one hand she gulped as she would really like to have them. On the other hand, she struggled to refuse the offer by shaking her head.

“Me, I am not a bad person, all I want is taels of silver!” That Demon Abyss Ranker acted like it was a very good person.

It stretched out it’s hand.

Many multi coloured candy, like magic just appeared in its palm, blinding Niu Niu’s eyes.

Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl kept staring ahead, making a great effort and continued to shake her head to say no. Suddenly, she turned her eye once again to look at the candy, and weakly she said, “Are they really sweet?”

Once the Demon Abyss Ranker saw that there was a chance, it just nodded to her and tempted her once again, "All yours and I have plenty more where it came from, you can eat all you want, till your heart content!"

Having no resistance to candies, Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl took another two steps toward the candies, then stopped.

She took another two steps and then stopped again.

The Demon Abyss Ranker kept tempting her, baiting her, removed a wrapper on one of the candies, popped it into his mouth, then proceeded to chew very loudly and expressed that the candy was really nice and sweet.

Obviously Niu Niu was tempted.

She walked closer and closer.

It kept smiling at her, encouraging her to go to it. It felt so proud of what it had done to attract her. Dealing with such a beast with low intelligence was too easy.

Their intelligence told them that this Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl loved sweets and all they need to do was just to prepare some poisoned sweets for her to consume. They would not need to fight and be able to capture her easily.

When it was feeling all pleased with itself over the ploy to poison her, suddenly, Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl exploded forward with a thunderous and powerful punch.

She hit right at its heart.

The Innate Level one person was hit with full force and flew sent flying.

Its ribs were all crushed, as it laid on the ground, spewing blood.

"You actually wanted to tempt Niu Niu with delicious candy, you are definitely a bad person. My brother told me, unless they are my relatives, whoever gives me any candy are the bad guys! You are

just despicable, you know that Niu Niu loves delicious candies, so you use that to lure Niu Niu, I hate you! My brother told me that bad guys like you need to be fiercely punished by Niu Niu, otherwise I will be cheated. Niu Niu will never be cheated. You bad person who bullies children, accept death!” Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl was so angry that her power increased more than before. She rushed forward and further bashed up the Demon Abyss Ranker so much that he could not even get up, just groaning on the ground.....

Yue Yang knew the weakness of Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl way beforehand, which was why he had trained her specially to resist these kinds of temptations.

Except for himself, Fourth Mother, Drunken Cat big Sis, Yue Yu and the other girls, he had prohibited her from accepting food from anyone else. In her special training, they had even tested her with food brought in by Ye Kong and Fatty Hai to tempt her and she was told not to accept. This was to improve her determination to resist and also to improve her memory so that this would become something that she could truly implant in her memory, just like what she just did.

Anyone else that intended to bribe her with candy for whatever reason or purpose, she was to treat them as the enemy.

According to Yue Yang’s special training, Niu Niu was to pretend that she was falling for the ruse, get closer to the enemy then hit them with her strongest punch!

This special training that she underwent was extremely successful.

Finally, this overly confident person finally got it from her, what a tragedy.....

“I hit him, again and again, you are a bad person who bullies children, you really need to be taught a lesson, hit, hit, hit, hit!” If Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl had not ambushed it with a powerful

punch and fought head on, there was only a fifty-fifty chance for the battle to be won. Since this surprise attack was a success, it heavily injured the Demon Abyss Ranker and beaten it to the point that it was not able to retaliate any further. It could only endure the pain and crawl away.

“Move out of my way!” In a move, its ally, who had sent Yue Yu flying, came over to replace it, “You cannot even defeat a Holy Beast, what kind of standard do you maintain?”

“Be careful, this little panda is not that simple.” The Demon Abyss Ranker who was on the ground warned his ally.

“You are just useless, not that she is powerful or skilled, get out of my way, little kids just go home to suckle on your mother’s breast. This is a battlefield, there is no room for little kids who cannot survive out here!” Another Demon Abyss Ranker nearby specialised in Hell Fire just used his claws to fling away Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl’s fists. His mouth spewed a column of fire which made Niu Niu scream in pain and retreat.

“I will not let you go, you dare to hit out at my second sister and Niu Niu!” Yue Bing saw how Yue Yu was sent flying and also the burn on Niu Niu. Her anger rose close to the boiling point. She was originally observing Sky Disaster, who was in the most dangerous situation and prepared to assist her. Now that she saw that both Yue Yu and Niu Niu lost, she summoned up both her Ancient Titan Tree and Green Light Tree Demoness, while she herself entered directly into battle with the two Innate Ranker that came from Demon Abyss. Although Yue Yu was a stubborn girl, she was normally good tempered and rarely got angry, but once she gets angry, she was the same as Yue Yang and went berserk.

Yue Bing’s eyes widened round, pupils in that instant turned green while emitting a soft glow.

Her black hair stood on ends, though there was no wind around.

A terrifying energy surged up from her ten fingers. It rapidly

expanded forming a huge energy field.....Within this energy field, both the thirty meters tall Ancient Titan Tree and Green Light Tree Demoness became stronger than before and become one in will with their owner.

Both Innate Rankers that had just arrived at the battlefield, realised that they were trapped within this energy field, feeling surprised.

The Innate Ranker who tried to deceive Niu Niu with candies was also caught up in the energy field. He was badly injured, so he retreated quickly as he did not dare face Yue Bing head on.

Conversely, the partner that felt that he was better skilled actually advanced towards her, reached to claw at Yue Bing's face and spewed a column of fire from his mouth. He did not believe that a person like her, who was not an Innate, could actually fight and beat him, a Level 2 Innate. Even though she was the sister of Yue Clan Third Young Master, beating him would still be impossible!

In their intelligence report, this Yue Bing was not even a match against Feng Qi Sa.

Even if she had improved tremendously under the guidance of Yue Clan Third Young Master, she would not be able to match up to him in battle. She was not even an Innate so it was simply impossible to beat him.....

“Die ! Though your brother is the Yue Clan Third Young Master, it does not mean that you are going to survive fighting with me!” In his heart, he continued to sneer at her as his claw almost reached and pierced her eyes. He saw no reaction at all from her, thus it increased his confidence that he could indeed kill Yue Bing.

“The moon is curved, the moon that looks like a hook!” Yue Bing did not defend herself, she just did a somersault. Her body gracefully turned. While both her legs were in the air, she used them to draw out a crescent shaped silver light. These kicks

developed by Yue Yang were specially tailored for his sisters and this was not the first time they were being used. It's power had already far surpassed the power when it was first conceived. It was hundredfold more powerful now. A mere inversion of her body was all it took for the proud Innate Ranker to fly across the ground.

It felt the full force of the kick and felt immense pain across its chest and stomach areas, sending him flying away.

From the sky, Ancient Titan Tree used its massive hands and slapped it back to ground, just like swatting a fly.

The Ancient Titan Tree hit it directly and brought it straight back to the ground.

With the enemy still in immense pain all throughout its body, when it could not even avoid or move anymore, Ancient Titan Tree further used its enormous legs to step on it.

The Innate Level 2 Demon Abyss Ranker used his arms to defend himself from death, but it was still ruthlessly stepped deeply into the ground. The Ancient Titan Tree stretched out its hand and dug out the ground along with the enemy. It then heavily threw it back to the ground. At the same time the enemy landed on the ground and spat out blood, countless thorns had tenaciously bound the enemy's body. The thorns had grown from the ground and directly pierced through the enemy's body.

The Demon Abyss Ranker that was hurt earlier came rushing in to try to assist and save his partner. However, all he saw was a partner that was almost completely dark green from head to toe.

Its partner had been inflicted with poison.

Even if it could bring its partner away, it would definitely die in the end.

It had to run away, the fear it felt was unimaginable. Suddenly, a shadow appeared from the sky. It was Yue Bing who descended



downwards, "Moon Step!"

Yue Bing could not have killed it with a single attack. The terrifying one was actually the Ancient Titan Tree, which had exceptional reaction time surpassing any of the plant type beast. Just after Yue Bing sent the opponent flying in mid air, it stretched out its hands and caught the Demon Abyss Ranker that tried to trick Niu Niu. Then, it slammed and pressed the Demon Abyss Ranker into the ground with its huge hands, sending him almost ten meter under the ground with its tremendous strength, causing the ground to shake with a very loud bang.

It waited until the thorns and vines were wrapped around it before it released its hands.

Then, it took ruthlessly stepped on it.....

The Demon Abyss Ranker had not yet died. It tried to struggle free from the vines and escape the place. However, Yue Bing did not pay anymore attention to it. In the sky, Yue Yu dived down with the Angel Blade acting as wings behind her.

One slice and the Demon Abyss Ranker was decapitated. Its head flew through the air.

"Ancient Tree, trample!" said Yue Bing who had just arrived at Sky Disaster's battle site. Ancient Titan Tree ran right into the battlefield while ignoring the shockwaves caused by Innates fighting. It followed Yue Bing's instructions and trampled on the Innate Level 7 vice commander of the Thunder Corps. You could see the pain and agony the vice commander was experiencing under its foot. He had to tunnel himself out, digging a channel under its foot like a marmot while the Ancient Titan Tree continued to step repeatedly on the ground until he managed to escape. It wasn't a pretty sight.

Until now, he finally realised that this little sister of Yue Clan Third Young Master was really a tough opponent.

Especially her Beast, which could not be looked down on.

The vice commander's beast was a huge Thunder Lizard. It was originally a strong beast, but it was not even far in front of the Ancient Titan Tree, as it was oppressed.

"Kill!" The Fierce Tooth Corps' vice commander made a surprise attack towards Yue Bing, wishing to kill this girl.

"Ancient Tree, substitution...." The Green Light Tree Demoness had stayed by her master's side protecting her when the enemy attacked. All she did was wave her hands and miraculously Yue Bing and the Ancient Titan Tree would swap places. Ancient Titan Tree took an attack from the Fierce Tooth Corps' vice commander, then counterattacked with its huge arms, reaching out and even extending the hand when needed. It chased the vice commander by growing its arms and then swatted him like a fly.

"This Green Light Tree Demoness is the real key." War Tiger Corps' vice commander suddenly realised that she was the real problem. However, it was too late. Sky Disaster had gained a chance to catch her breath. She yelled in anger, "You damned bastards, taste my power..... Sky Disaster descend!"

When Sky Disaster showed her wrath, it was no joking matter.

Before this, she was waylaid by three of the vice commanders, leaving her no room to make her move. She was thoroughly pissed with her opponents.

Yue Bing came to the rescue in time, and also gave her a chance to breakout. Once Sky Disaster released her strength, people of Demonic Palace who knew of her power stayed away.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty forgone her battle and came right back, shielded Yue Bing, Yue Yu and Niu Niu The Little Panda right behind her.

Hai Ying Wu and Drunken Cat Big Sis also took the chance to beat back their opponents, and arrived behind Phoenix Fairy

Beauty. When the enemy finally realised that something was wrong, they tried to disperse, but it was already too late. Sky Disaster was already high above the ground, her anger reached its peak, releasing the power of Sky Disaster.

Lara oozed out of the ground, flowing and spreading all over the area.

Millions of meteors appeared in the sky, whistling downwards as if it was the end of the world.

The most terrifying thing here was that all these natural disasters had their purposes and were not random. The meteors would chase after the enemy

Sky Disaster's unique skill needed time to execute. When faced with a powerful opponent, her Sky Disaster power would not be able to display its might.

However, if she was rubbed the wrong way, and obtained a chance like this, it was equivalent to judgement day.

The earth shook and the ground cracked!

Judgement day!

This Sky Disaster power was her strongest power.

# Chapter 640 – Sorry, I Too Hid My True Strength

---

The lake side was filled with Heaven Realm Dwarves.

Ever since their supervisors died, they simply did not know what to do. Right now, all they were hoping for was for Yue Yang their new owner to return. However, Yue Yang did not come out at all, instead only Stone Element Medusa came out. She first unsummoned her Golden Tiger Shark, then she instructed the Blood Python King and its children to head toward where Fatty Hai and Ye Kong were located.

All the Heaven Realm Dwarves kneeled, praying for Stone Element Medusa to take over them.

They were fully aware that she too was another person's beast, but they had been accustomed to having warriors look after them. Without an owner, they were not able to live.

Stone Element Medusa pointed at the Blood Python King, then indicated that these extremely timid dwarves should follow them, making them leave the place.....then she patrolled around the lake one and leaped back into the lake, returning to Yue Yang's side.

After she vanished, those shadows in the far away ruins appeared once more.

“The unsealing of Heaven Stairway's third layer had failed. Zhi Zun and Night Empress had seen through our plans. Your Majesty, we need to redeploy and rework our plans and aim to beat the enemy. Otherwise, we are not going to be successful in the entire unsealing plan if this goes on.” The leading shadow, with some worry in his voice said, “Both Zhi Zun and Yue Clan Third Young Master are real difficult opponents, unfortunately, your Majesty's power has not recovered.....if they are both not eliminated quickly, their combined power is going to be more powerful than Prison

Emperor many years ago.”

“We still have a little time. With the Heaven Stairway’s limitations, We have a chance of killing both Zhi Zun and the Yue Clan Third Young Master. We hold the initiative here, not them. Even if we are racing against time, we still have the advantage right now.” The other shadow said to ease the concern.

“Yue Clan Third Young Master is an unstable element in all of these. We cannot rest until we are able to kill him.” The leading shadow said and hatefully looked at the lake.

“He should be in a battle with the Hell Hydra right now. The fact that the Stone Element Medusa coming out unhurriedly to patrol the place, we can conclude that he is neither in advantage or disadvantage. With his craftiness and ability, it is very difficult for the Hell Hydra to defeat him. The only question now is how long can this guy stay inside the water world. The longer it takes, the worst it would be for our plan. There is a huge chance that he will notice that luring him inside to kill the Hell Hydra is a trap.” The man standing beside the leading shadow habitually stroked his chin thinking, “Maybe we need a new plan.....”

“If captain and vice captain do not mind my intrusion, I have a good idea.” A big giant among the Heaven Realm Warriors stood out.

“Tell me.” The leading shadow lowered his voice, deciding to listen to these muscle for brains.

“Actually, in order for Yue Clan Third Young Master to not suspect our plan, we simply move right in, lend a hand and help him kill this Hell Hydra. He would never know that our main purpose is really to kill this Hell Hydra and not him!” The giant explained.

“Once we enter, the Yue Clan Third Young Master is just going to run away.” The leading shadow felt that this was not a good idea.

“No, if all of us enter the place together, that will naturally scare away Yue Clan Third Young Master, and will also alert Zhi Zun. However, if we only send a few of us in, like someone from the Heaven Realm, who is well versed with underwater battles, join hands with the Hell Hydra and fight against him, then what will the Yue Clan Third Young Master do then? He will not run. He will only try harder to kill the Hell Hydra.” The giant was pleased with himself for the suggestion and laughed out, he thought his plan was certainly going to work.

“Two problems, one, how will Yue Clan Third Young Master know that the person entering the fold is friendly with the Hell Hydra? We know that the Hell Hydra’s attacks are indiscriminate. It would be easy for him to conclude that we are not allies. Two, how will this person gauge his power? If this person is too powerful, this will force Yue Clan Third Young Master to retreat, if this person is too weak, then it is easy for him to die by Yue Clan Third Young Master’s hands, maybe it will end up as pointless.” The leading shadow questioned.

“This.....” The giant had no other suggestions, bowed his head and was unable to give any more answer.

“We can still try it out. I guess that Yue Clan Third Young Master is fully aware that it is impossible to kill all the Hell Hydras, but he will do it a bit at a time. First he will try to kill the weakest one, keep them agitated and slowly grind away their strength. If none of us go in, then he will have all the time in the world for a war of attrition. If we send someone in there to join in the fight, it may be end up being better for us.” The vice captain, who habitually stroke his own chin, thought that the plan might just work. Success would depend on how they planned everything.

“Zhi Zun and Night Empress are probably coming to support Yue Clan Third Young Master very soon. If they are allowed to enter the water world, things will become worse.” The leading shadow told them that there was not much time left and they needed to

come up with another plan and set that in motion soon.

“We can send in a single person skilled in aerial battles, pinching him in between sky and sea.” That vice captain brought out a star shaped piece of treasure, “This is the Peace Medal, its function is to eliminate hostility. Although the effect of this talisman on a powerful opponent like the Heaven Realm Hell Hydra is not significant, it is certainly better than having nothing. I also have another plan, and that is to immediately sink the Ancient Transportation Portal below the water world’s depths, the lower it is the better. We then activate the portal from outside, using Heaven Runes to gain control over the Ancient Transportation Portal’s energy, using it to extract the water from the water world. In this way, Yue Clan Third Young Master would be unable to teleport out, temporarily trapping him inside. He would be unable to get out until the Ancient Teleportation Portal is above the water level. I estimate that if we blow up the island and sink it with the Ancient Teleportation Portal ten meters below water, the Yue Clan Third Young Master is likely to be trapped in there for at least a year.”

“Wonderful plan, the only unknown here is whether Yue Clan Third Young Master can escape using items like teleportation scrolls.” The leading shadow felt neither glad nor worried.

“If we base his teleportation abilities on his teacher, Shui Dong Liu, he should not be able to affect the sealed area within. Yue Clan Third Young Master’s skill in teleportation originated from Shui Dong Liu, but he did not delve into it too much, so his improvements should not be that much. The only problem here is that they were able to go to Heaven Realm, then they surely have a teleportation type treasure. This treasure could be with Zhi Zun or with Yue Clan Third Young Master. We still have no information on this.” The vice captain analysed.

“Yue Clan Third Young Master should not have teleportation treasure. This is because when Sky Execution was fighting the

Black Hell King, Yue Shan was there. If Yue Yang had such a treasure, then he would not be absent. He would not sit and watch Yue SHan die. The teleportation treasure should not be with Yue Yang or Zhi Zun. It should be with the Night Empress. Zhi Sun could break space, so teleportation type treasures are not really that useful for her. However, we cannot say the same for the mysterious Night Empress. She is also one of the formidable opponents that we cannot look down on.” The leading shadow based his information on various reports and made a very sound judgement.

“Very well, since that is the case, we would like to invite Mister Yong Hui to make a move then!” The vice commander looked at the shadow behind him and handed over the Peace Medal.

“Why me?” the shadow was baffled, “Isn’t Yue Su better at aerial battles?”

“It is correct that Yue Su is better at aerial battles, but Yue Su has no experience in water battles. The consequences would be dire once he falls into the water. Captain Yong Hui, your duty is not to kill Yue Clan Third Young Master, but just to annoy him, harassing him so that he has no time to think about our plans.. Maybe you will also be trapped inside for a year. Within the year, please ensure that you will not be killed by him and keep wasting his time and strength, leaving him no time to do his training or to level up in his skills!” The leading shadow trembled slightly, then passed something like a shining rainbow coloured pearl to him, “This is the the best of the Four Division Pearls, Green Dragon Pearl, it is rarer than any holy treasure. When you possesses it, you can enter the water like a dragon. If you can collect all four of these pearls together, then they will transform to become Four Holy Pearls, which in turn can transform the beasts into holy beasts! This is a treasure that His Majesty gave me as a present. I am now lending it to you, and if you do what we expect of you and succeed, His Majesty will have more treasures to bestow upon you!”



“Yes.” Yong Hui immediately became happy and quickly accepted the pearl, promising that he would complete his mission as planned.

“.....” few of his comrades had sparkles in their eye, completely jealous of him.

After putting on the Peace Medal, he held onto the Green Dragon Pearl.

The one named Yong Hui, a Heaven Realm Ranker, moved through the sky like a meteor and slipped into the lake quietly.

After teleporting successfully, he entered the water world where he could find Yue Yang. After about three minutes, a big water column came out of the lake, spraying upwards and reaching over a hundred meters. This phenomenon made the leading shadow somewhat happy and began shouting out his orders, “Search everywhere, see if Yue Clan Third Young Master had escaped from the water world!”

The vice commander already rushed to the lakeside.

He carefully sensed the place and realized that no one had left.

Quickly, he dove into the lake and used a Heaven Rune to keep the Ancient Teleportation Portal’s operation..... He had set the elaborate Heaven Rune to only transfer water and a few weak fishes. Teleporting an Innate like Yue Yang would require more energy.

The beautiful part of this Ancient Teleportation Portal was that as long as it is transferring something, the other side could only wait.

That was to say, if the water continued to flow, Yue Yang would not be able to leave the water world no matter how powerful he was, unless someone discovered the secret to controlling the energy for the Ancient Teleportation Portal and destroyed the Heaven Rune attached to it.

No matter how smart Zhi Zun and Night Empress were, they would probably think that Yue Yang's disappearance was caused by his Majesty's plan, but they would never guess that he was trapped in the water world....this was really a very efficient and clever plan that had worked out perfectly. Perfect timing and location had just come to pass. It was even better than anything man-made. The success of this plan was certainly not due to their intelligence but through the assistance of the favourable location and the timing of it all.

The only thing they need now was a trap to divert both Zhi Zun's and Night Empress's attention onto his Majesty, or even to Heaven Realm. This way Yue Clan Third Young Master would be trapped in the water world for the next 10 years!

The leading shadow, together with the vice captain smiled at each other, they were both pleased that this impromptu plan worked.

Within the water world, Captain Yong Hui, who had fully released his Heaven Rank power, was very pleased with himself as he sunk the island a hundred meters below the water.

Even staying in the water world for the next ten years would be alright.

At least for the time being, the Green Dragon pearl belonged to him. With it, he could raise a stronger water-type beast! Actually, he had thirsted for the leader's treasured Green Dragon Pearl for a long time, but he would not dare to show that he longed for it. Refusing to be part of the plan was just a ruse to draw out the Green Dragon Pearl. Who knew that it would succeed. As long as he stayed here for ten years, the leader would be no match to him after he came out, at that time who would be the owner of the Green Dragon Pearl?

It's really not easy to say!

"Clap, clap, clap, clap, clap!" Yue Yang continued to clap his

hands as a sign of welcome for Captain Yong Hui, confusing him. Was this guy crazy or what?

“What a joke! Kill!” Captain Yong Hui did not even care about the Yue Clan Third Young Master. He was not even a Heavens Ranker, so what if he was strong?

“Wait, I really do not want to fight you now.” Yue Yang shook his hand and put on a nice smile, as bright as sunshine, “Perhaps we are going to be neighbours for many years to come, let’s just say hello and introduce ourselves!”

“What are you talking about?” Captain Yong Hui felt a little confused.

A few of the Hell Hydras that saw the little island disappear were alarmed, each of their bodies floated above the water surface like little floating islands.

Yue Yang laughed and said, “Actually, I cannot bear to say goodbye to you. Moreover, someone as generous as you is rare as you took so much trouble in bringing this treasure here. I know that it comes from your heart, now perhaps I can just accept it gracefully!”

In another battlefield, Thunder of the Center that was chasing the Southern Goblin King, stopped suddenly.

He look proud.

He sneered at the stunned Southern Goblin King, “Eastern Goblin Tribe’s Princess, I would like to apologize. If you don’t have any other capabilities, I will kill you right here. Do you know why I chased you all the way here? I was afraid of revealing my true power to certain people. In fact, I have reached Innate Level 10 over half a year ago, My true power is over ten times more than what you can see right now.”

Thunder of the Center pressed both hands and his body slight shuddered.

Tremendous power seemed to emanate from his body.

Compared with a moment ago, this was certainly at least ten times more than what could be seen. Electric arcs grew around his entire body. A strong shockwave shook the earth within a thousand meters. Stones and sand moved. The ruins under his feet was turned into fine powder, becoming a sand storm.

In an instant, Thunder of the Center arrived behind the Southern Goblin King.

He raised his lightning fist in the air, used a rather despising tone and said, "Do you have any last words?"

The Southern Goblin King was stunned.

It was after a while before she recovered and reacted to what was said.

She turned around slowly, assessing the real power of the Innate Level 10 exhibited by Thunder of the Center.

Initially, Thunder of the Center felt very glad. In fact he enjoyed the look of helplessness in others face. He liked using this kind of unexpected power to break their spirit. The total dominance seemed to give him great pleasure. He liked to watch enemies that were full of themselves and reversing the situation on them, making their faces turn white with despair when they saw the fist coming down on them for the kill.

If not for the fact that he wanted the Southern Goblin King to die with maximum pain and filled with so much fear in him, he would not have waited at all and killed her in an instant.

But, killing her instantly would not be pleasurable!

What he wanted was to scare her out of her wits before killing her.

Shiver, shiver before me! Thunder of the Center's gaze was filled with sheer arrogance and contempt for the world.

Suddenly, he felt surprised as he did not see the Southern Goblin King trembling anymore, instead she was rather happy and looked at her own hands. He felt rather confused.

“Is this thing on your arm the Thunder God Chain? Isn’t that supposed to be hanging around your neck? Give that to me. I like this treasure. Quickly take it down for me. Such precious treasure is a waste in your hands!” Southern Goblin King had a craze for collecting treasure. As soon as she sees treasure, she did not care who owned it, she just had to have it no matter what.

“Now, I truly understand that talking to a woman is really a waste of time!” Thunder of the Center was rendered speechless. All they worried was treasures even though they were close to death.

“Not all men think like you. Yue Yang would be different. Surely you are not him and had not attained his level, so it is normal.” Southern Goblin King smiled as though she was just boasting like any idiot would.

Thunder of the Center felt so angry, he wanted to bring down his killing fist at the moment when she produced her sweetest smile. the fist was going to come down for the kill.

This fist had the power to kill anyone below Innate Level 9.

But nothing happened to the Southern Goblin King at all.

She repelled Thunder of the Center’s palm easily, with a laugh. She gradually raised her power to peak Innate Level 10. Not only did she raised it to the same level as that of the Thunder of the Center, but she surpassed it reach the peak of Innate Level 10, very close to Heaven Rank. In total disbelief, Thunder of the Center suddenly felt fear rising, Southern Goblin King gracefully stroked the jade pipa that she held, “I am sorry, I too hid my true strength.....I will surely take your Thunder God Chain. Anyway, since you are so close to death, that is going to be useless to you, isn’t it?”

# Chapter 641 – Sunny Sunflower, Spirit of Radiance

---

Water world.

Captain Yong Hui was really puzzled, how did this Yue Clan Third Young Master know that he would be coming through?

If he knew that he was coming, and if he saw that he destroyed the island, why didn't he stop what he was doing?

This guy was really too calm.

So steady and unperturbed that it seemed a little abnormal, and also a little suspicious.....

“If you really think that you'll be able to trick me with these cheap tricks, think again, you are gravely mistaken.” Captain Yong Hui had enough confidence in himself. He was a peak Level 4 Heaven Ranker, almost reaching Level 5. Although Yue Yang possessed both the World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame, his speed and ability was not enough to be able to hit him, absolutely impossible!

Anyway, as long as there's light in this place, this Yue Clan Third Young Master would not be able to kill him.

He possessed the beast, Spirit of Radiance.

No matter if it was the bright sun during the day, or the light from the night stars, it could give him unlimited power. This meant that as long as his beast did not die, he, who was contracted to it, would also never die! This was the reason captain and vice-captain picked him to enter the water world, and not Yue Su.

Captain Yong Hui secretly looked down on Yue Yang in his heart, but on the surface he continued to be cautious.

After all, the Yue Clan Third Young Master had a very bad reputation to his name.

Also, both World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame were formidable and were no laughing matter.

He summoned another Heaven Realm Beast, Sunny Sunflower.

Sunny Sunflower was a very special kind of beast which had no fighting power, it was normally an Earth Rank Level 1 plant-type beast that lived in colonies. Since they could not live without sunlight, they could not leave the Sun Valley. The Sun Valley was also known as the Hot Valley, which was the only area where Sunny Sunflower could spawn. Other than spawning Sunny Sunflowers, there was also a gigantic tree called the Fu Sang Tree in that area.

Of course, if it was just like that, the Sun Valley would have become an adventurer's paradise, since the lowest levelled Sunny Sunflower was selling at one hundred thousand taels of gold each in the Heaven Realm.

However, Sun Valley was an off-limits area for all Heaven Realm Rankers because there lived a Divine Bird known as the Golden Crow.

This kind of Divine Bird was already a Holy-ranked beast when it was first born.

It will become a Divine-ranked Beast once it evolves into a Golden Crow King.

Within the Sun Valley, no one could ever defeat the Golden Crow King, not even the strongest of the Heaven Rankers. It was impossible..... Even if a Domain Emperor-class being personally visited the Valley, they had to transact with the Golden Crow King before being able to obtain a Sunny Sunflower. It was impossible for them to steal one, and more impossible for them to occupy the Sun Valley. Sun Valley was a forbidden land, belonging to one of the powerful Eastern Globin Tribe, the Golden Crow Tribe. Even the Central Palace and the four Realm Kings acknowledge this point.

Heaven Realm's Sunny Sunflower was an ancient plant type beast that was thousands of years old.

Yong Hui was able to obtain a Sunny Sunflower purely because he was lucky. With both Sunny Sunflower and Spirit of Radiance, these two beast helped built a name for Captain Yong Hui in Heaven Realm. From this other began calling him 'Eternal Splendor', which then led him in building his Yong Hui Mercenary Group, a group that was within top thirty in the Western Heaven Realm.

Once both were beast summoned, Sunny Sunflower would take to the sky, straight up, reaching several meters high.

Like the sun, it emitted unbounded radiance.

It could maintain light continuously for a month, and before the light goes out, any attack on it was ineffective. There was only one weakness for this beast, but even Yong Hui was not aware of its actual weakness. He had only heard from the mysterious giver that a weakness existed.

Since he himself was not even aware of this hidden weakness, surely Yue Clan Third Young Master would not know it too. Captain Yong Hui felt pretty confident of that.

With the Sunny Sunflower, Captain Yong Hui would never die, almost becoming immortal.

He also had the Spirit of Radiance.

Its body was almost transparent like a ghost. It wore a laurel on its head and emitted a soft glow all over its body like an angel suspended in mid air.

She was the Spirit of Radiance.

The way to produce this beast was to extract the spirit of a Radiant Angel which was forced to destroy its own physical body, then go through a secret refining method to wash away its memories, creating an almost man-made beast.



The secret making this Spirit was a forbidden technique in Heaven Realm, as this was an inhuman method that destroyed a body. The method for creating a Spirit of Radiance was called “Demonic Spirit Slave Refining” in Heaven Realm. It was considered as one of the ten Heaven Realm Evil Technique. Within the Mercenary Guild in Heaven Realm, anyone caught using this forbidden technique would be given a bounty of one billion, and if any organisation was found using this method, the Domain Emperor Class Ranker would send in their experts to destroy and kill all that were involved.

Surely in the black market, these refined spirit slaves was one of the auction items.

Perfectly refined spirit slaves like the Spirit of Radiance owned by Captain Yong Hui would cost as much as sixty million in an auction. It was three times more expensive than the Sunny Sunflower’s cost.

The Spirit of Radiance could absorb all light from the surrounding ten kilometers.

And then convert that to energy, endlessly supplying energy to its owner.

Even if the contracted master of the Spirit of Radiance received a life threatening damage, it would immediately heal them with the energy it converted. As long as there was light, the exceptional healing powers of the Spirit of Radiance could be used on their master, such that the master would have no fear of death! Sunny Sunflower and Spirit of Radiance was a perfect combination. It was many ways better than the combination of a Sleepy Moon Dragon and a Dream Eating Tapir. The healing powers of the Spirit of Radiance was much better than the Radiant Angel, focusing all its power for healing purpose would certainly enhance and magnify that power.

Its only weakness would be its inability to fight.

Spirit of Radiance that had lost its intelligence, did not understand how to help its owner.

She was left with only one ability.

Healing!

“Come, Hit me!” Captain Yong Hui could easily imagine how the opponent would react when they see the immediate healing effects of the Spirit of Radiance. What would their facial expression be like? In Heaven Realm, Heaven Rankers, who were stronger than him, were not even willing to fight him, because it was only a waste of effort on their part. With the combination of Sunny Sunflower and Spirit of Radiance, nothing would be effective unless they were able to instantly and directly destroy the Spirit of Radiance’s soul..

“Gu, gu, gu.....” After seeing both Sunny Sunflower and Spirit of Radiance in the sky, the Hell Hydra King retreated into the water, avoiding a battle with them.

“Ha, Hahahahahaha!” Captain Yong Hui laughed out loud. The Hell Hydra also knew that it could not win the battle. He had the Green Dragon Pearl for water and now there were Sunny Sunflower and Spirit of Radiance in the sky, so what if the Yue Clan Third Young Master was abnormal? Could his World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame attack the Sunny Sunflower that was thousands of meters above ground? Under his own instruction, any attacks against the of the Sunny Sunflower would be useless in the end. The Spirit of Radiance would move at an even higher speed than it, very much like himself. She could actually return to his side at anytime, so there was really no concern against any quick attacks that the opponents could mount.

“That’s good. Looks like you are very confident!”

Yue Yang clapped his hands and laughed, “I only wanted to entice an ordinary Heaven Ranker, instead, I received such a surprise, not bad!”

After commenting, he moved in the blink of an eye.

He simply disappeared right before Captain Yong Hui's eyes.

The speed in which that happened took Captain Yong Hui by surprise and stunned him. He never thought that Yue Yang possessed speed ten times faster than what he anticipated, so he quickly ran away. When he finally felt safe, he could no longer find Yue Yang anywhere.

Even the Heaven Realm Level 4 Captain Yong Hui could not find any trace of where Yue Clan Third Young Master was.

Did this guy dive into the water?

Or he was hiding in a place, preparing for an ambush?

Captain Yong Hui had to keep moving, he could not stop and continued to fly haphazardly around, not giving Yue Yang any opportunity to sneak in an attack on him.

Anyway, they both had all the time there, it was only a matter of patience in the end. He had the Spirit of Radiance, which was never going to feel tired. So he could pick on him slowly as he got tired. If Yue Yang was to hide away and avoid a fight with him, then he could use the Green Dragon Pearl and train another powerful beast from it, ten years was the time he had with Yue Yang!

Little did he know that right now, Yue Yang was hiding just behind the giant Sunny Sunflower right now.

Looking at all that was happening below him.

Yue Yang's face revealed a somewhat mysterious smile.....

He brought out the Three Realm Compass and temporarily teleported away from behind the Sunny Sunflower, a blind spot that even Captain Ying Hui was not aware of. If not for these two amazing beasts, Yue Yang would have started fighting him and steal his treasures. Then he would leave the place, leaving the guy

there to stay within the water world for the next ten years.

After seeing these two beasts, he changed his mind.

He decided to deal with something much more important first.

Later when he could find some free time, he would utilise the Three Realm Compass to return and take care of this guy.

“Boom!”

The gigantic Bear-man Vice Captain, fell to the ground. The entire Heaven Realm Charging Wolf Mercenary Group had been completely destroyed, other than the tall-hat man.

How could the people from Demonic Palace be all vegetarians?

An up and coming youngster like Sky Disaster could cause a major disaster by just letting out her full strength. Also, how could those that are lined up after her like Sky Crime, Sky Calamity and Sky Wrath, miss this chance of increasing their level with this battle? Sky Calamity was heavily injured, but his opponents were crushed to death by him. Sky Crime and Sky Wrath had received almost the same amount of injuries, but their enemies were much more tragic. One of their enemies had been subjected to the pain of atoning for his crimes before he could die. Once the enemy died, their souls would not be able to obtain peace. Another one had its soul crumble apart, before its body dies, its will was slowly erased.

Certainly, compared to Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Sky Law judgement power when she annihilated captain, these two were far weaker than her.

They were only able to injure the enemy's soul, but not destroy them.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Sky Law power could completely destroy the soul, preventing them from reviving.

The tall-hat man on one hand was frightened, but also delighted. Sky Law had used her power twice already for the this battle, she

may not be able to use it the third time. Based on her current strength, she should not be able to use it the third.

He now felt completely safe.

What's more frightening was if this lady wanted to duel to the death battle with him, as they were both Heaven Rank Level 2, he might not be able to defeat her.....

When the tall-hat man saw that the Charging Wolf Mercenary Group was completely destroyed, and that the Thunder Corps' Innate Rankers being attacked by Sky Disaster, Yue Bing, Yue Yu, Drunken Cat Big Sis and Hai Ying Wu were either killed or captured, he started to hesitate. Then he saw Sky Law for the very first time summon her Guardian Beast. The Charm Demon Queen started to dance, and the power of this Divine Beast started to suppress everything else. He started to change his original plan. He took out a special Flaming Arrow found only in Heaven Realm and let it fly up into the sky.

He called for reinforcements.

Without powerful comrades, this battle could not be easily won. Even if it was won, it would cost too much.

The tall-hat man did not want this outcome.

Following his signal, two member of the Clown Group bearing their badges came from afar. They looked around at the situation carefully, then looked at the tall-hat man and said, "Didn't we say not to call on us? We will be easily exposed. Could it be that you can't even capture a Heaven Ranked woman? Except for this woman, others are just ants!"

Both that arrived were Heaven Rank Level Two.

One of them was stronger than the tall-hat man by a bit. However, the tall-hat man had a special skill 'Shape Shifting', which gave him the upper hand.

"Stop spouting nonsense. We need to quickly kill them all to

complete the sacrificial offering.” The tall-hat man no longer cared about his reputation. He shouted and attacked together with the other two secret comrades.

“In that case, it may be wise for us to call for reinforcements too!” Hai Ying Wu waved his Ocean Emperor Halberd and a man wearing a Gemini Mask appeared.

The tall-hat man initially thought that this was a beast, but on careful examination, he found that it was not.

Then he looked around and found that this person was only Innate Level 8, therefore he did not care anymore and waved his hand, “Kill them all, don’t leave anyone alive!”

The man with the Gemini Mask heard that and was shocked, “Fighting is not good, why don’t we all sit down, drink tea, eat some buns, and slowly discuss this? I really want to know why people from Southern Heaven Realm like you would actually travel thousands of miles to come to the Western heaven Realm lower level Tong Tian Tower? Don’t doubt me, I am actually a very good friend of your Clown Group Leader, in fact, I had a meal with him some time ago and we both also went in to the sauna together. We were just short of performing the ritual to become blood brothers.....what do you say, you of a lower level than me, why did you come to my home?”

## Chapter 642 – Who Is Saving Who?

---

The tall-hat man absolutely did not believe that Yue Yang actually knew their Leader. Let alone those in the Tong Tian Tower, but even the warriors of Western Heaven Realm might not even know the Clown Group Leader.

The reason Clown Group Leader specifically moved to Southern Heaven Realm to create the Clown Group was to keep it in great secrecy.

However, he also suspected that there may be a traitor in their midst, leaking out their secrets.

The Black Hell King's underling, Thunder of the Center, was one of their suspects.

This guy faked a chase, leaving speedily from the scene.

Who knew if he was passing information to the enemy? Black Hell King was dead, how loyal could Thunder of the Center be?

“Don't think that you could scare us just because there is a traitor among us giving you secret information. I am very sorry. We, from the Clown Group, are not easily scared.” Now the tall-hat man seems to be more optimistic, as he saw that Sky Law was the only person who had reached Heaven Rank. Now that she had exhausted her Sky Law powers, she could only fight to a standstill with him. He had two partners here. One was Captain Bai Ma who was capable of fast movement; the other was Hei Tu who possessed the ability to take the energy from the earth. They could certainly instantly kill everyone from the Demonic Palace. If the three of them combined their powers and still could not defeat Sky Law, then they don't even need to go back to the Clown Group out of shame.

“Haha. You are truly smart, it seems that I cannot deceive people from the Clown Group.” Yue Yang shrugged as he pretended to

have failed in deceiving people.

“Come out Spring Breeze.” Unlike the tall-hat man, the two other Heaven Rankers embraced a blitzkrieg strategy because they could not reveal their true identity for the sake of their secret mission. If it was not because their ally called them, they did not want to appear. The white clothed middle aged man stretched out his hand and summoned a wind element beast.

This beast was almost transparent and shapeless. It was far too different from normal wind type beasts.

It even looked like a domain, a mild breezy domain.

All the people around, including Yue Yang was enveloped within the body of this wind element beast. At the same time they also experienced the restrictive effect that it had on their ability.

This wind element beast was called “Spring Breeze”. It had a restrictive power different from a domain. While inside its body, a person could still fly, but their flying speed would be greatly affected. Moreover, the energy used to fly was greater.

Conversely, the white clothed middle aged man, would not be affected in this wind element beast’s body, instead he would be able to move like a fish in water.

Besides him, the tall-hat man and the black clothed old man had their speeds increased by a lot.

In contrast, Yue Yang’s party seemed to be affected greatly.

The situation right now was definitely not in their favour.

The white clothed middle age man did not only summon the elemental beast Spring Breeze, he also summoned a Heaven Realm Flaming Horse and an Infernal Nightmare.

Although both Heaven Realm Flaming Horse and Infernal Nightmare were both not Holy Beasts, their levels were very high. Their power was very close to Heaven Rank, almost the same as a



Level 10 Innate in the Tong Tian Tower. Their main task was not to attack, but to block the enemy's escape. With their extreme speed, once someone on Yue Yang's side wins a battle, they would not be allowed to leave the Spring Breeze's enveloped space. With the Heaven Realm Flaming Horse and the Infernal Nightmare blocking them, they will die without a doubt.

“Sandworm, Evil Spider, Rock Horn Lizard, Demon Rattlesnake.” The black clothed old man summoned even more beasts. Their power was equivalent to that of the white clothed middle aged man.

The Evil Spider had the power of a Heaven Rank Level 1.

Its large body was more than twenty meters long. If a Giant Dragon were to see it, it would probably be scared running.

The black clothed old man merely use both of his legs and stamped on the ground. His energy was then transmitted to the ground. The energy of the ruin floor had been absorbed by him, turning the floor around his body into sand. After a few seconds, it had spread ten meters around him, and after a minute, it had reached a hundred meters in diameter, reaching Yue Yang and the others.

This person's beast seemed to be expert in fighting battles in sandy terrain.

On the other hand, the Heaven Realm Flaming Horse and the Infernal Nightmare immediately flew in the air, as if they did not want to touch the sand.....

“Kill!” The tall-hat man felt that he had nothing to say to Yue Yang. Heaven Rankers were fighting with Earth Rankers. Moreover, the Heaven Rankers had such strong beasts, was there any doubt in their victory?

“Let them kill!” Yue Yang unconcernedly waved his hands.

“Who allowed you to shoot your mouth off....” The white clothed

middle aged man didn't even wait for Yue Yang to finish speaking, as he appeared behind Yue Yang. He fiercely punched, wanting to shatter Yue Yang's backbone to pieces. He was always annoyed by people who were all talk and no ability. For these kinds of people, he had the same punishment and that was to break their backbone with a single blow. Then watch them squirm on the ground like a dying snake, weeping in regret. At the same time, the black clothed old man also quickly got behind Sky Wrath, as he could see that other than Sky Law, this was the strongest person among the people from Demonic Palace.

The tall-hat man started his attack. He used his shape shifting skill to appear behind Sky Law.

Naturally, he was only trying to test the waters.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty ignored him. In exchange the Charm Demon Queen, defending her, shook off the attack and quickly counterattacked with her demon tail that was like a sharp spear.

Sky Wrath, Sky Calamity, Sky Crime, Sky Fury and the others did not even bother to surround and attack the black clothed old man. On contrary, they acted as though they did not see him and rushed straight toward the Sandworm, Evil Spider, Rock Horn Lizard and Demon Rattlesnake.

On the other side, Yue Bing too had instructed her Ancient Titan Tree to attack.

Hai Ying Wu's Golden Three Headed Dragon avoided the strongest among them, the Evil Spider, instead it decided to take to the air to fight the Infernal Nightmare.

Although its level was not enough, it was still a descendant of the Golden Three Headed Dragon King. Even if it was unable to defeat its enemy, it would be able to hold for a long while.

Yue Yu did not move forward to attack.

She continued using her Healing Water Ball toward Niu Niu the

Little Panda Girl who was resting in Yue Yang's arms. After a bloody battle, Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl was seriously hurt in the battle. Drunken Cat Big Sis had her morale boosted when she saw Yue Yang's arrival. After she was knocked flying by the Rock Horn Lizard, she made an exception and drank strong liquor in front of Yue Yang. Using liquor as a trigger, the huge hidden energy inside her body became stimulated..... once she entered into a drunken rage, her fighting strength changed. She was even able to shake off the influence of the beast, Spring Breeze, during her fight.

“Hey, Get Lost!” Drunken Cat Big Sis grabbed hold of the Rock Horn Lizard's tail, lifting its big body and swung it around.

Its body rotated a few rounds, and then tossed a hundred meters away.

Boom!

The Rock Horn Lizard was half buried into the ground. If not for its thick skin, it could not avoid receiving heavy injuries. But the type of brute strength shown by the Drunken Cat Big Sis made every male from Demonic Palace flabbergasted, thinking that even before she was Innate, she already had this kind of strength. If she leveled up to Innate, how strong would she get?

In her drunken state, Drunken Cat big Sis could really defeat any normal Innate....especially after her training with Yue Yang, this Big Sis' battle ability had rapidly shot up. She found it difficult to display this kind of potential when she was not in a drunken stupor. Once she was drunk, she found it easier to control her strength/ This was the reason Yue Yang trained her specially.

The white clothed middle age man attacked Yue Yang. At the moment his palm touched his back, a sharp blade tore through space to attack him.

It was a banshee with a speed far greater than him who was known for being the fastest in the Clown Group.

It was Red, who was holding onto Crescent Moon.

Her strongest advantage was her speed.

“Ah.....” Bloody Queen Red let out a sharp cry. Her Banshee Cry caused Captain Bai Ma to feel like his brain was being stung by thousands of bees, buzzing around. It was also similar to having ten hammers slamming down on it, causing him to blank out. When he came to his senses, he found that the sharp, chilling blade had already unleashed more than ten slashes in front of him.

Captain Bai Ma tried to take one slash as a way to quickly escape.

He felt that he had fallen into their trap.

The opponent was calm and collected, so there must be a horrifying plan in place, he thought.

Just as that thought surfaced, his body had already retreated more than a hundred meters with his quick speed. What really startled him was that he actually bumped onto another person, it was the person he wanted to kill, the talkative man who was not even a Heaven Ranker. How did he get here ? How was he quicker than him when he was actually trying to escape a death blow? Was it real or an illusion? The white clothed middle aged man could not think right now as a Lamia Loli appeared and attacked him with her Dual Icicle Blades.

Whether it was because of the freezing effect of the icicle blades of some kind of binding power, Captain Bai Ma was not able to quickly respond..

He noticed that he had already been fixed in mid air.....

The talkative man that was still holding the Little Panda Girl did not actually made any move against him, and only let out a ridiculing smile at him.

From the sky, a thunderbolt accurately aimed at Captain Bai Ma's head. Although the power may was far from Sky Law's Thunder, receiving this thunder bolt would still be unpleasant. Captain Bai

Ma felt that his elegant hair would be no more and turned into a birds nest.

“Slip away!” Once Captain Bai Ma regained his freedom, he once again tried to make a run for it.

Between the pincer attack from Xiao Wen Li and Red, Captain Bai Ma was able to miraculously escape from their attack net. It was very mysterious and very dangerous. Once he activated his special powers, he was confident that he could escape from even a Heaven Rank Level 3 without being hurt. This technique, ‘White Horse Slipping Away’, was the move he was known for and also the origin of his name.

After escaping at least a hundred meters away and about to wipe his sweat away, he unexpectedly knocked into another person. It was once again Yue Yang.

Captain Bai Ma was now quite frightened of this perilous situation. He wondered who Yue Yang really was. How was he quicker than him even after he used the “Slip Away” technique?

No one could offer him an answer. A Medusa appeared by his side and launched an arrow, attempting to hit his lower leg before he escaped again. Just as his speed slowed down, a Whip of Agony came down on him, heavily striking Captain Bai Ma’s back.

Storm Mermaid and Yue Yu almost simultaneously conjured two water dragons, shooting towards Captain Bai Ma’s body.

This kind of blow was ineffective against a Heaven Ranker.

But, to the Ice Serpent Demon, these two water dragons were her best killing machines....she was faster than the Thunder Naga and came from afar, she leaped and slashed at the water dragon, trapping the Captain Bai Ma within the ice formed by the water dragon.

A spectacle appeared in the sky.

The two water dragon quickly turned into ice, forming what

looked like an arch bridge, with their mouth biting Captain Bai Ma, seling him in ice.

Captain Bai Ma could not bear the pain and shattered the ice dragon, escaping from the broken pieces of the ice.

He did not want to fight anymore, this was not a real battle, it was really just torture! He hadn't even displayed a tenth of his overall strength but he had been beaten thoroughly and senselessly. This battle was too depressing..... Captain Bai Ma decided to change opponents. He went after the people from Demonic Palace instead and let Hei Tu kill this brat.

Just when he manage to escape, he once again bumped into another person.

It was Yue Yang again.

Captain Bai Ma immediately had an impulse of weeping bitter tears, "Can't you just let me fight properly? I had received support from Spring Breeze and used my Slipping away skill, how can I not even match up to you who is holding the Little Panda Girl? Could it be that you want to force em to hang myself?"

"Hei Tu, let's change opponents." Captain Bai Ma tried very hard to hold back his tears. Using his hoarse throat, he shouted a phrase.

"This old man here is not free, come over here and help me get out of this trouble first...."

On the other battlefield a much more painful cry for help echoed.

Captain Bai Ma was stunned, he found that his partner Hei Tu who could absorb power directly from the earth was now bound with the God Binding Chain by a Barbarian Cow Shadow, being beaten severely from head to toe, unable to even fight back. He was frightened, only after quite a while before he uttered, "What about your ability to create sand, can't you escape underground anymore?"

Hei Tu was seething with anger, "Escape your ass. This damned Barbarian Cow Shadow has the Heart of Earth and just restrained my power. Quickly come help me!"

Captain Bai Ma felt pain in his balls when he heard this. He wanted to ask for help but his ally was also being beaten up!

Again he saw that Yue Yang was sneering at them, then he realised that Bloody Queen Red, Stone Element Medusa, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon were all slowly surrounding him. He nervously swallowed, wetted his lips, then turned to Hei Tu and said, "I think that I also need a bit more time because it seems that the enemy will not easily let me leave....."

## Chapter 643 – Want to talk about conditions? Bring it on!

---

The tall-hat man failed to see his companion driven into corner, he feigned retreat to lure Phoenix Fairy Beauty, so that he could distract the strongest one away.

Never would he dreamed that his two Heaven Ranked comrades were not only unable to attack the enemy, they were also desperately in need of his help.

Due to Yue Yang's arrival, the members of the Demonic Palace knew there would definitely be zero possibility of failure. Their confidence levels rose rapidly. Seeing how Yue Yang was able to play tricks on the enemies as if they were nothing, their morales were greatly boosted and they went all out to attack. Ultimate skills were released as their attack sequence became smoother. By mutually strengthening each other's power, their combined power became multiple times stronger than normal.

After an hour of ferocious battle, the Sandworm that was underground was shot dead by Sky Disaster. She took most of the credit killing the first monster.

Drunken Cat Big Sis, little panda girl Niu Niu, Yue Yu and her beast 'Stormy Waves', Storm Mermaid together defeated the Rock Horn Lizard, making it the second monster to die. However, the monster that was supposed to die second was the Evil Spider, who was fighting against Sky Wrath. For the sake of upgrading himself, Sky Wrath deliberately left the Evil Spider alive and continued to train with it. He wanted to achieve a breakthrough and rank up. Furthermore, Evil Spiders had an unbelievably fast self-regenerating abilities. Once it had a moment to rest, it would recover all of its battle power. It was an extremely difficult opponent. Among the Demonic Palace members, other than Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty, only Sky Wrath had the power to



win against this monster.

The arrogant Sky Calamity fought against the Infernal Nightmare for a long time.

He was reluctant to kill this strong beast. He would rather force it to betray its master and forced it to serve him.

It was a pity seeing how the Infernal Nightmare was very loyal to its masters. Although Captain Bai Ma was currently being ganged up and beaten by Xiao Wen Li and the others, it still persistently refused to betray its owner, leaving Sky Calamity with a mixture of emotions filled with hatred and happiness.

He was happy that the Infernal Nightmare remained loyal, proving that it was a good beast. What he hated was, it did not belong to him.

There was another battle between Sky Crime and the Heaven Realm Flaming Horse, which was also intense as it was hard to differentiate the winning party. If the Heaven Realm Flaming Horse's abilities continued to be amplified by Spring Breeze's amplification skill, Sky Crime would only be able to fight on par with it. However, due to Xiao Wen Li's Purifying Light skill that had the ability to disperse energy, Spring Breeze's amplification abilities were greatly reduced. Anywhere that was touched by the Purifying Light caused a gigantic decrease in the enemy's powers. On the other hand, everyone in Yue Yang's party was healed from tiredness and fatigue. Without the support and the power of Spring Breeze, the Heaven Realm Flaming Horse could not release powerful attacks to break through the strong defense of Sky Crime. On the contrary, the violent storms summoned by the Storm Mermaid had caused a rapid decrease in Heaven Realm Flaming Horse's battle power, causing it to retreat little by little from Sky Crime's attacks.

Luckily, it was nimble enough to escape from a fatal attack.

Sky Crime was not able to take it down in a short while.

Before Storm Mermaid blew her horn to summon violent storms and before Yue Yu summoned Stormy Waves, the Demon Rattlesnake was extremely formidable. By relying on its own strength, it had caused the three fairly low-levelled Sky Demons namely Sky Fury, Sky Assassinate and Sky Sword to fall back as they were unable to return its attacks.

Sky Sword's serious injuries had previously implicated him, which caused him to be almost killed several times.

Nevertheless, Hai Ying Wu's powerful Golden Three-headed Dragon stepped forward bravely and saved his life.

With the emergence of Yue Yu's Stormy Waves and the Storm Mermaid's violent storms, Demon Rattlesnake suffered immeasurably in the slippery conditions as its natural instinct and habitat was dry deserts. After Yue Yu used her Healing Water Ball to heal Sky Sword, he became so angered that he became even mightier than Sky Wrath who carried the Sky Anguish Drum. Waving his Holy-ranked sword, Sky Sword faced the Demon Rattlesnake, who had its movement and reaction time greatly reduced, head on. He used his sharp, piercing Holy-ranked sword to stab his enemy many times, trying to appease his hatred from almost being instantly killed previously.

Captain Bai Ma and Hei Tu could not imagine that just by making it rain and summoning a water type beast, would change the direction of the battle completely.

The wet environment also had a huge impact on the Infernal Nightmare and Heaven Realm Flaming Horse, who were fighting an aerial battle.

At the same time, the hateful Thunder Naga summoned thunders and lightnings from time to time, landing sneak attacks on the enemy on the enemies.

Despite losing the ability to go underground, the Evil Spider was still able to float on water, so it was not very badly affected.

However, Sandworm, Rock Horned Lizard, Evil Spider and Demon Rattlesnake had indeed fallen into a drastic state. Especially Sandworm, as its natural fighting skills evolved around the deep, buried sands, it had become useless without the underground environment. It had turned into an ice statue due to Sky Disaster's skills, Judgement Day: Tornado and Judgement Day: Glacier. Since the Rock Horned Lizard was unable to drill underground and fight in the wet environment, it became a stone figure which eventually got crushed alive by the violent lady and small panda... It was the one who died the most tragic death as it had perished under the hands of non-Innate ranked warriors.

Captain Bai Ma hated Xiao Wen Li the most as her presence had prevented his attacks from pushing through after receiving a binding pressure.

The little lamia was more evil than the devil itself!

Yet, Hei Tu did not agree.

He felt that the real terror was none other than the Barbarian Cow Shadow as she had the Heart of Earth with unlimited stamina as well as the power of a titan.

Even a Heaven Ranked Level 2 was beaten up by her with almost no powers left to return attacks.

At times, Hei Tu even doubted whether he was a Heaven Ranker.

Of course, he would have been long dead if he were not Heaven Ranked.

Ah Man, who had extra strength from Giant Shadow, was not a foe any ordinary warrior could take on.

To Hei Tu, he must admit that this had really been a torturous battle. When exchanging their attacks, he sorrowfully realised that the female Barbarian Cow's martial arts were better than his. Furthermore, exchanging blows with her was meaningless. As long as she stood on the ground, she would quickly stand up no matter

how many times she was beaten down. What if he tried to escape? This female Barbarian Cow held the God Binding Chains in her hands. This damned chains even had the ability to completely restrict him, a Heaven Ranker... Hei Tu, who was caught up in this situation where he kept getting beaten, almost cried when he saw Storm Mermaid summoning a storm and Yue Yu summoning Storm Waves.

This was too unfair! Forget about fighting against the Female Barbarian Cow who possessed the Heart of Earth, which was his weakness, they were even starting a water battle!

The tall-hat man circled around and returned without attacking.

He initially thought that he would see his enemies corpses lying all around, and his comrade would be waiting for him to attack Sky Law together, with smiles on their faces.

He never thought that the actual situation was the opposite of what he had expected. The number of enemies did not decrease but his comrades were beaten up and wounded badly instead. His enemies were laughing, waiting for him to return... Seeing how Yue Yang put up a bright smile in his face, he had a sudden impulse of knocking his head on a tofu to death. (Shiro: knocking head on tofu = speechless, dumbfounded. Coz death by knocking your head on tofu is like, you know?)

“Damn it, Zhong Guan, how did you become a special envoy? You reported the wrong information, leading us to a trap and escaped by yourself. All of our beasts are going to die soon, where the hell have you been?” Captain Bai Ma forced himself to swear in the middle of battle because he was immediately, utterly infuriated when he saw the tall-hat man finally returning after pursuing Sky Law.

“Come here quickly.....” Hei Tu did not even have the luxury to talk.

Sky Calamity, Drunken Cat Big Sis, Yue Yu and the others who

had killed their enemies had some free time to help Ah Man fight against Hei Tu. To Hei Tu, this was basically making his situation even worse than before.

This was because a water battle was never his forte.

It was his weakness!

Seeing the powerless situation, the tall-hat man Zhong Guan started to have a headache.

How did his comrades, who were all Heaven Ranked, got beaten up so badly by the enemies like this? What happened? He had only circled the place once with Sky Law, but the situation here suddenly became like this. It was simply unbelievable!

Like a lightning flashing across his mind, he suddenly had a revelation. If the rumours were true, there was only one person who had this kind of abilities! The tall-hat man Zhong Guan, shrieked towards Yue Yang who have not been attacking from just now, “You, are you the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master? No, you should not be here, how did it happen? Could it be that Ye Xiao, Zi Guang and Yue Su did not manage to tie you down? You are supposed to be fighting in another Ancient Seal, you are not supposed to be here. How did you manage to rush here? You, did you use a body double previously?”

Yue Yang kept mum.

When his sarcastic smile was still reflecting on the tall-hat man Zhong Guan’s pupils, Yue Yang’s body had disappeared.

He the re-appeared right behind Zhong Guan. When Zhong Guan’s pupils contracted and he was preparing to escape, an Everlasting Wheel that had a diameter of ten meters appeared beneath Yue Yang’s feet. Zhong Guan’s body froze in the sky. From Captain Bai Mai and Hei Tu’s perspective, Zhong Guan was like a wooden puppet that was smashed into pieces with one attack from Yue Yang. He was beaten to the point that his eyes turned green

and his nose became swollen. His beautiful clothes now became even more tattered than a beggar's. Even the tall hat on the tall-hat man Zhong Guan's head that he valued like his own life was swept away, floating on the knee-deep water.

The first thing Zhong Guan did when he recovered was to retrieve his hat.

He wore it with pride.

Only then he heaved a sigh of relief, as if the hat represented his own life.

However, Yue Yang refused to let him go, he waved his Tao Tie Blade and unleashed his skill, Earth Splitting Slash.... Zhong Guan hurriedly escape, with his hands supporting his hat. His body fell miserably into the water with a drastic impact, causing a huge splash of water.

"It is impossible, right?" Captain Bai Ma and Hei Tu was undoubtedly disappointed, they had initially hoped that Zhong Guan would be their saviour, but he ended up being in a more terrible state. The young guy's capabilities were way higher than any of them. Even if the three of them attacked simultaneously, they would probably still lose, especially with the presence of the horrifying Sky Law and the other abnormal beasts.

"We are willing to surrender. We hope all of you will follow the rules of a Heaven Realm Battle and let us surrender with pride, we will be more than willing to pay for compensation fees." The tall-hat man Zhong Guan understood as well that he was never an opponent for the Yue Clan's Third Young Master. If he were to continue fighting, he would not be able to go back to the Heaven Realm alive. Hence, surrendering would be a better choice.

The moment he saw that Yue Yang was slightly distracted, he stood up immediately.

He first tidied up his hat, making it straight.

He then arrogantly said to Yue Yang, “As a Heaven Realm warrior, even when the battle is lost, there will still be recognition and dignity. Before we pay the compensation fees, none of you should throw any forms of insults. Besides, we have the rights to keep secrets, no questions allowed. As a Heaven Ranker, we view our honour like our lives.”

According to the rules of Heaven Realm Battle, Heaven Rankers were indeed allowed to perform a surrender of dignity when faced with an unfavourable circumstance.

For instance, the Raging Flames Chivalrous Bandit Group, when the Niu brothers saw an undesirable situation, they surrendered to the Lionheart King.

Nobody mocked them because in Heaven Realm, it was a perfectly normal act in order to conserve one’s strength or if it was necessary in that situation.

As a Heaven Ranker, their lives could be placed above anything else... There were many kinds of favourable policies for a Heaven Ranker’s surrender. For example, even though the Niu Brothers had surrendered, they still maintained their dignity and reputation. The Clown wasn’t able to insult them nor force them to reveal secrets. He could only detain them from the battle.

Of course, this situation was completely different from Tong Tian Tower.

Tong Tian Tower viewed surrender as a form of insult.

Especially at these three places: the Soaring Dragon Continent, Heaven Stairway and Demon Abyss. In these places, dying in battle was regarded as the highest honour while surrendering was regarded as the most despicable and weakest action.

This was the reason why the tall-hat man Zhong Guan explained the rules quickly in fear that Yue Yang might not know the rules of the Heaven Realm.

Yue Yang listened and nodded his head, with a hint of a smile, “Well, Heaven Realm may be like that, but all of you have to keep in mind that this is in Tong Tian Tower and this is Heaven Stairway. Of course, none of this is important. Most importantly, I am the one in charge of this place, understand? Only my words can become the rules. Otherwise, I will assure you that you will definitely ‘enjoy’ this beautiful journey in Tong Tian Tower.”

“Ah no, I would like to protest.....” The tall-hat man Zhong Guan became furious, it was as if he was meeting with an unreasonable barbarian.

“My first rule is, whoever wants to talk about the conditions must first have the authority to.” Yue Yang laughed while ignoring the protest.

“So how do we determine the authority to request conditions?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked while laughing.

“For instance, not uttering a single word after getting beaten up for a few hours.” Yue Yang understated.

“Understood!” everyone responded.

The fastest one to react was the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man. She landed a powerful punch on Hei Tu, causing him to cry out loud in despair, “What an idiot you are, Zhong Guan! Since we are at his mercy, we need to bow our heads to him. Why did you talk about those Heaven Ranker’s dignity bullshit? What surrender of dignity? All these beatings and mockery were all the results of your arrogance! Idiot, just agree with him already, I am almost dying from the beatings of this female Barbarian Cow!”

Zhong Guan did not have the chance to speak up as he was beaten up by the collaboration of Phoenix Fairy Beauty as well as the Charm Demon Queen. He had no time to plead for mercy.

Things was slightly better for Captain Bai Ma.

After being beaten viciously by Xiao Wen Li and the Bloody



Queen Red once, he could finally catch his breath and surrender out loud.

Yue Yang looked to the sky and dug his ears with his pinky, pretending that he could not hear anything.

The arrogant smirk in his face really deserved a beating.....

---

Recap:

Demonic Sky Palace's Sky Demons(by order of highest rank):

天诛 – Sky Execution

天罚 – Sky Law (Phoenix Fairy Beauty)

天谴 – Sky Wrath

天劫 – Sky Calamity

天罪 – Sky Crime

天灾 – Sky Disaster

天怒 – Sky Fury

天杀 – Sky Assassinate

天剑 – Sky Sword

天龙 – Sky Dragon (dead, replaced by Yue Yang – Sky Wolf)

天狼 – Sky Wolf (Yue Yang)

# Chapter 644 – Secrets, and more Secrets to Come.

---

Based on the ‘voluntary answers’ from tall-hat man Zhong Guan, Bai Ma and Hei Tu, everyone finally understood the whole situation.

The truth was, the Heaven Realm Gate’s seal was not as perfect as they imagined it to be.

Somewhere in the Guang Ming Continent in the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, there was a tiny crack.

Every year, due to the turmoil of storms in space, there would always be a crack in that area. If a large amount of fresh blood was sacrificed, together with a firm control of space, sending one person from the Heaven Realm to Tong Tian Tower would not be a problem, as it had more than 80% of success rate. In other words, besides the Heaven Realm Gate that would only open in every 100 years, there was another pathway leading to the Heaven Realm through Guang Ming Continent. Sadly, the controller had been secretive.

This controller was none other than the Ancient Demon King.

Even the Guang Ming Continent’s Winged Clan had no idea of this secret because the crack existed in their God’s Graveyard.

When a Winged Clan Ranker died, a tiny crack would form in the deep space.

The Ancient Demon King who held this secret was in no hurry to look for helpers from the Heaven Realm.

For thousands of years, he had been more actively searching for his sealed body and a vessel for his soul, so as to restore his power... It was only until the awakening of Black Hell King, that Ancient Demon King realised that there was a high possibility that a second Prison Emperor had been reborn. However, by the time

he was aware that the real successor to Prison Emperor was not Zhi Zun but Yue Yang, it was all too late. Given his current state, he could no longer kill Yue Yang. Furthermore he also had to hide from the pursuit of Zhi Zun.....When Yue Yang came back from the battle in the Heaven Realm, Ancient Demon King quickly made plans to get reinforcements from the Heaven Realm and resurrecting the Ancient Demons.

The Charging Wolves Mercenary Group, the Clown Mercenary Group, as well as many other mercenary groups from Heaven Realm, had all accepted and agreed to work for the Ancient Demon King.

Under Ancient Demon King's convincing but insincere words, all of them came to the Tong Tian Tower to participate in Ancient Demon King's plans to release the seals and resurrect the Ancient Demons.

Thus, leading to the explosion of the battle here in Heaven Stairway..... Through Zhong Guan and the others' story, Yue Yang were able to predict several future possibilities and also obtained the answers to the questions that he had been harboring for a long time in his heart. The Ancient Demon King definitely had many helpers and luckily, he knew a portion of them, otherwise, it might have been dangerous. Yue Yang had given up in guessing who the man Ancient Demon King was possessing. He was confident that it was that person..... However, where was the real sealed body of the Ancient Demon King? This was a question that Yue Yang needed to answered desperately. No matter what, he could not allow the Ancient Demon King to find his real body.

“Just now, you said that other than your party, there are two other parties here, right?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked.

“Maybe there are a lot more.” Zhong Guan nodded his head while carefully setting his hat straight, “But I have only seen Ye Xiao, Zi Guang, Yue Su, and Yong Hui's party. There was one more which I have not seen but heard of. Anyways, only god knows whether the

Ancient Demon King has a fourth team, even I do not dare to guarantee it.”

“Tell me more about Ye Xiao, Zi Guang and the people in their team.” Sky Disaster asked.

“You are not Heaven Ranked, we have the rights to reject your questions.” The tall hat man Zhong Guan was afraid to be arrogant in front of Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty but felt that they should still throw the airs of a Heaven Ranker in front of Sky Disaster.

“Are you asking for a beating again?” Yue Yang was angered. She was his sister-in-law, only he was allowed to bully her.

“Beat him, brother-in-law, give him a harsh beating!” With the support of her brother-in-law, Sky Disaster did not care about the Heaven Ranker at all.

“Hey, let’s not use violence, we can talk it out instead.” Zhong Guan could not be arrogant in front of Yue Yang, he quickly defended himself in fear that Yue Yang might really beat him up badly. He put on an act of honesty and said: “[Ye Xiao](#) and [Zi Guang](#) were originally warriors from Tong Tian Tower, they were Ancient Demon King’s subordinates. However, after the Heaven Realm Gate separated the two worlds, they could not return from the Heaven Realm. Hence, they formed the Ye Guang Mercenary Group, which had a fairly strong reputation in the Western Heaven Realm. After a long time, when the Ancient Demon King appeared, they returned to Tong Tian Tower again. Both of them are very strong, they are both above Heaven Rank Level 5. Their bounty adds up to 500 million gold or more.”

Ye Xiao means night owl

Zi Guang means violet light, merging them together makes Ye Guang – night light

“In one of the region in Western Heaven Realm, [Yue Su](#) was once

titled the king of air battle as he was extremely powerful in air battles.” Captain Bai Ma, whose face had been so badly beaten up that it resembled a pig, quickly explained to Yue Yang as well: “However, although Yue Su is a Heaven Rank Level 4, if loses his air superiority, he would be more useless than the 3 of us. Many warriors from the Southern Heaven Realm thought that Yue Su was a pseudo Heaven Rank Level 4. His real strength was only Heaven Rank Level 3, but as his aerial beasts were extremely outstanding, he was recognised as Heaven Rank Level 4. His bounty is not that high, it’s just 250 million gold. Compared to our 150 million gold bounties, his bounty is only higher by 100 million.”

Yue Su means moon lodge

“How about Yong Hui?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked.

“That fellow, he is the leader.” Even though Hei Tu did not know as much, he didn’t want Yue Yang to feel that he didn’t contribute anything, so he quickly replied.

Zhong Guan explained, “He was a friend that Ye Xiao and Zi Guang made in Heaven Realm. I don’t know how he got his shitty luck, but he has three extremely abnormal Beasts. First is Sunny Sunflower, second is Spirit of Radiance. With these two beasts, it is almost impossible for him to die. Killing him would be harder than killing a Heaven Rank Level 5 warrior. The third beast is known as Light Speed Fang, it is a very strong beast. Together with his first two beasts, they formed a terrifying team. That fellow, Yong Hui, is even harder to kill compared to Ye Xiao and Zi Guang. The only thing that he lacks is attack power.”

“There should be more, right?” Yue Yang asked. Yue Yang had met Yong Hui and seen Sunny Sunflower as well as the Spirit of Radiance, so he was confident that this fellow wasn’t lying.

“In their team, there is another weird guy called Bei, another one called Wo Gua, and another one called Gu Deng. All of them are

stronger than us. They are the strongest team. We only have four Heaven Rankers on our side, or rather we only have 3 Heaven Rankers. After reaching the third level of Heaven Stairway to revive an Ancient Demon, I was paired up with Thunder of the Center and arrived here. Hence, I am not very sure of the detailed situation over there. I am not very sure about the other parties too. It had been rumoured that they might still be in Heaven Realm as a huge amount of power is needed to transport them through space to Tong Tian Tower.” Zhong Guan reported. Actually, the reports he gave was not much. To Yue Yang, the only important information he garnered was the existence of that crack in space.

“Continue with the reports on Bei, Wo Gua and Gu Deng.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty decided to squeeze every last detail from them.

“Ah, we are not so sure. Heaven Realm is a very big place, bigger than you ever imagined. It is impossible for us to know each and every person.” Zhong Guan shrugged, indicating his lack of knowledge.

“Maybe all we need was just a gentle reminder, to aid your memory.” Sky Disaster clenched her fists and flashed a violent look.

She stood beside Yue Yang to make use of his authority to scare them and threw her fists in the air, trying to scare them.

“What are you saying? When we say we do not know, we really don’t! You are just a weak, insignificant girl. You are not even a Heaven Ranker and you dare to question us? As a proud Heaven Ranker, our words are as good as gold, and as long as we are willing to spill any secrets, we will not hide it away. Hence, you should never question our honesty.” Zhong Guan furiously shouted at Sky Disaster.

“Beat!” Yue Yang waved his hand and gestured to Bloody Queen Red and Ah Man to hit them.

“We really did not hide.....” Captain Bai Ma and Hei Tu panicked. Wasn’t confessing everything enough? Why were they still getting hit despite confessing?

“Even if you were not hiding anymore secrets, you will still get beaten, it all depends on my mood.” Yue Yang decided to stand up for his sister-in-law. He was obviously avenging a personal grudge in the name of public interests. Mocking my sister-in-law? That was just seeking death. I am the only one who can shout at her. His expression was showing defense towards his sister-in-law without him saying a word.

“You are the best, brother-in-law!” Sky Disaster used her sweet high voice to compliment her brother-in-law.

“If anyone dare to bully you in the future, just tell me their names.” Yue Yang said as he patted his chest, acting as arrogant as the dragon slaughterer, Lord Shabak from the Legend of Mir 2.

“Okay!” Sky Disaster nodded happily like a newbie getting protected by the big boss, a very good feeling indeed.

What can Zhong Guan and the rest say?

They were just sacrifices in the process of his flirtatious actions. They understood it and had no choice but to be strong.

Anyways, they had already been beaten up numerous times, so a few more times would not matter.

Yue Yang did not ask about the Clown Mercenary Group as it would definitely arouse their wariness against him. Even if he were to interrogate, he would have to wait until their defense was down and then bring it up casually. Only then would he be able to make sure of the Clown’s true motives. Clown clearly knew the Ancient Demon King, they could even be best friends too.

Before the Ancient Demon King was reviving Ancient Demons, the Clown already sent a few of his subordinates. Furthermore, it was more than half a year ago.

So, what did this mean?

This meant that he obviously knew vital secrets of Tong Tian Tower!

Also, why would the Clown who originated from the Western Heaven Realm, travel all the way to the Southern Heaven Realm to form the Clown Mercenary Group? Why would Lionheart King from the Southern Heaven Realm collaborate with Clown?

All these doubts showed a distinct conclusion.

Clown was definitely not as simple as he seemed...

Yue Yang couldn't rush the investigation of Clown right now. He had some kind of premonition that if he was able to unravel the riddles on Clown's identity, maybe he would be able to understand the Ancient Demon King's situation more clearly.

Surely, these two parties had an extremely close relationship!

"Come in to the Demon Suppressing Pagoda. When we reach Heaven Realm, pay the compensation fees and we will release you." Yue Yang first made a promise, pretending that he was abiding by the Heaven Realm ransoming rules. Furthermore, Zhong Guan and the others also didn't have any power to retaliate. They could only hope that this brat could quickly reach Heaven Realm so that they could pay the ransom fees and escape. Once they returned to Southern Heaven Realm, they would never set foot on this horrifying Tong Tian Tower again.

"What should we do now?" Everyone looked at Yue Yang, hoping that he would provide a good idea.

"Brothers from Demonic Palace, the battle here has ended. If you are tired, you can go back to rest or provide support to the others." Yue Yang knew that these people were battle maniacs. They wouldn't return just like that, hence, he gave them a mission.

"How about us?" Sky Disaster was unwilling to leave as she wanted to stay with her brother-in-law a while more. She felt that



it was very exciting when she was staying by his side.

“Ah, we will be getting ready to beat up a big, big mouse.” Yue Yang turned his head towards Yue Yu and Yue Bing: “Yue Yu and Bing’er, I have an excellent plan, and I might be able to get some good beasts for each of you. We shall judge the suitability of the beasts for each of you when we take it down!”

“What are we waiting for? Let’s go!” Sky Disaster couldn’t wait to leave. She didn’t even want the corpses of the Sandworm and Rock-horn Lizard.

“Help me get one Infernal Nightmare, you can set the price.” Sky Calamity did not manage to force the Infernal Nightmare to betray its master at the end. He grinded against his teeth and sought help from Yue Yang: “I am willing to exchange with my entire assets.” He had great determination. For the sake of his beloved Infernal Nightmare, he went all out.

“Good, wait for me to finish this battle. Good things will be shared among everyone, just give me some time.” Yue Yang knew that finding another Infernal Nightmare was not a big deal. Even though Sky Calamity was slightly arrogant, he was still his wife’s family after all. Using an Infernal Nightmare to buy over his brother-in-law was quite a good deal. There would definitely be times when he would be of good use. Moreover, this brother-in-law was willing to use his entire asset to make an exchange. Hence, Yue Yang would not be at the losing end.

His words cheered up Sky Calamity as well as Sky Fury, Sky Assassinate and Sky Sword.

Without a powerful beast, it was difficult to increase their battle power and capabilities.

Sky Wrath and Sky Crime looked at each other.

Smiling.

Sky Crime kept the corpses of Sandworm and Rock Horned

Lizard, then rushed towards Ye Kong and Fatty Hai's battle.

Even though Hui Tai Lang was supervising together with two Abyss Manatees, due to the inconsistent changes during battles, they could only be at ease after checking personally.

As for Yue Yang, he brought Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Sky Disaster, Yue Yu, Yue Bing, Hai Ying Wu as well as Drunk Cat Big Sis to another battle. The battle at that place would be their end game.

That place was a peculiar world that prohibited the use of any weapons and bare-handed attacks.

It was the water world that had been sealed with the Ancient Code by an ancient ranker.

# Chapter 645 – Mutual Slaughter?

---

“Where the hell have you been?”

Yong Hui flared up when he saw Yue Yang, he flew down furiously and shouted, “Fight or not, where have you been for half a day?”

He was not only furious but also a little wronged. Just like a widow, secretly finding a partner and when he finally came, with the posture ready and preparing to relax, instead, that guy went to close the door for half a day, which angered him. Captain Yong Hui felt sorrowful and extremely bitter, did they think it was easy for him to coordinate? Firstly, he had to summon Sunny Sunflower, then the Spirit of Radiance and when the fight was about to start, the guy disappeared to god knows where.

Luckily, they were enemies and not friends. If not, Captain Yong Hui would be extremely furious.

The most saddening thing for Captain Yong Hui was that he had to spend 10 years in this water world with him. If Yue Yang did nothing but hide, what else could he do in there?

He was indifferent if they fought all day since he would not die, but if Yue Yang kept hiding, then he would be bored to death as he stayed in the water world!

Yue Yang remained calm and unagitated, he even smiled and said, “Sorry, I was rushing for the toilet just now!”

“You peed for half a day?” Captain Yong Hui felt that only an idiot would believe his lame excuse. He suspected that this guy was trying to stall time to wait for the summoning period to be over in order to fight. He used an arrogant look and smirked, “Don’t be naive, the beasts that I have summoned can at least stay for a month. If you have the guts, then hide for a month.”

“So it is for a month.” Yue Yang nodded, as if he understood

something.

“.....” Captain Yong Hui found something amiss.

This guy, he would not hide for a month right?

It was useless to hide for a month as he could just summon another beast. The problem was, if Yue Yang really went into hiding, then he would have no one to talk to, and would be bored to death. It was simply too pathetic to be left alone in this water world while Yue Yang entered his Grimoire World!

Captain Yong Hui started to feel dizzy. Although Tong Tian Tower Rankers were not strong, their ability to contract grimoires far surpass Heaven Realm.

Even a Heaven Rank Level 4 like him did not have grimoire.

However, in Tong Tian Tower, anyone who claims to be an Innate would have one in their possessions. Moreover their grimoires were all higher than gold rank, which was totally insane. The ancient legend was right, Tong Tian Tower was a place where even a god would be jealous. Luckily, the strong warriors were gone, if people like the Prison Emperor existed, then Heaven Realm would not be at peace.

A million years ago, it was rumoured that the Heaven Realm was a battlefield where Tong Tian Tower Rankers fought.....just imagining that half of the Tong Tian Tower's highest bounty came from Tong Tian Tower was enough to frighten others.

“Let's start, no matter you or me, in this ten years, we should not think of getting out. We should take this chance to fight everyday. Who knows, maybe you will be able to reach Heaven Rank when you leave this place.” Yong Hui did not want to kill Yue Yang and even if he could kill him, he would not do it because he would go crazy due to boredom and loneliness without enemy or friends. He felt that the best way was to disable the guy and then make use of the guy's recovery period to train his beasts.

He would slowly torture the guy while leveling up the his beasts. 10 years was plenty. Moreover he had the Green Dragon Pearl which was able to increase his beasts' fighting strength!

After nurturing his beast, even Ye Xiao and Zi Guang would have to be submissive towards him.

Weren't they only stronger than he because they had a grimoire, a Guardian Beast? Was what he thought..

Yue Yang randomly found a rock on the island to sit on and asked, "Since we cannot leave within 10 years, maybe we can converse normally. Even if we cannot be friends, we do not necessary need to be enemies too."

Captain Yong Hui sneered, "If you are a Heaven Ranker, I might reluctantly agree to your suggestion. Unfortunately, you are just an Earth Ranker, the difference in power is too vast."

Yue Yang did not waver upon his disdain, "Are there a lot of Sunny Sunflowers in Heaven Realm?"

His question sparked an alertness in Captain Yong Hui. He coldly stared at Yue Yang, "What do you mean, Yue Clan's Third Young Master?"

Yue Yang explained, "It's like this. If there are many more in Heaven Realm, then I do not need to snatch this beast. It is not really that great, but barely qualified. If there was anything better, then I would want a better one. In contrast, if Heaven Realm did not have many Sunny Sunflowers, then I will reluctantly accept this beast of yours as it is better than not having any beasts!"

Captain Yong Hui was furious. He laughed angrily, "Why don't you snatch my Spirit of Radiance too?"

Of course, what he said was only an ironic remark.

In Heaven Realm, even an idiot knew that once a contract was signed with the Spirit of Radiance, it would remain loyal and nobody could snatch it away.

As a peak Level 4 Heaven Ranker with an enormous power, not beating a puny Earth Rank level 8 like him was already the best result, but he even dared to say that he would steal his beasts. He did not know whether to laugh at his arrogance or laugh at how he did not know the immensity of Heaven and Earth!

Captain Yong Hui felt that this Yue Clan's Third Young mAsTer was a really spoilt child. Even though he possessed Nirvana Flames, World Exterminating Wheel, as well as achieving Earth Rank Level 8 at such a young age, he had a flaw. He simply did not know the difference in power, did not know that the Heaven Ranker in front of him could kill him by just raising his hand. Who did he think he was that he could say that he would steal his beasts? He was only a frog at the bottom of the well. He was only a young little brat, who was not even a Heavern Ranker, yet he wanted to steal his beasts.

“Honestly, I do not like the Spirit of Radiance because it has no intelligence. If there's a way to increase its intelligence, maybe then I will reconsider.” Yue Yang replied coldly.

“Ah....are you having a fever?” Yong Hui first touched his forehead to make sure that he had no fever, hence he was not hallucinating.

He came up with a conclusion.

If he was not sick then it had to be the Yue Clan's Third Young Master who was. Maybe he was a crazy person!

Yue Yang smiled. It was rare for him to speak the truth, yet he did it. Compared to Captain Yong Hui's hidden beast, Light Speed Fang, the Spirit of Radiance was not that powerful. Yue Yang's real intention was to get the Light Speed Fangs. The Sunny Sunflower and the Spirit of Radiance were not too bad and both could be useful for either the plant expert, Yue Bing or healer, Yue Yu.

Seeing the panicked look on Captain Yong Hui, Yue Yang simply took out the Demon Suppressing Pagoda and let Zhong Guan, Bai

Ma and Hei Tu out.

He simply said, “One word, fight. All of you will continue to fight until I command you to do otherwise.”

He ignored their reactions and disappeared like smoke.

Captain Yong Hui saw the three-man group, Zhong Guan, Bai Ma and Hei Tu and was astonished, “What is wrong with all of you? Why are you all here? What is your relationship with the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master? Zhong Guan, did you make a mistake somewhere. He is our enemy, yet you are working for him!”

Zhong Guan sighed and replied, “No hard feelings, Yong Hui, this matter has turned rather complicated and cannot be easily explained.”

Bai Ma and Hei Tu started to summon their beasts, getting ready for a fight.

Seeing their actions, Captain Yong Hui became hurt emotionally, which side were these guys on? He angrily asked, “Zhong Guan, are you really going to fight against me? Did a donkey kicked your brains? We are all from Heaven Realm yet you are listening to the commands of your enemy to fight against me? Is he crazy or are you guys mad?”

“I know, you are the Captain Yong Hui! I am sorry, be it putting up a show or fighting for real, let’s just fight! To tell you the truth, you should listen to me and follow our actions, just surrender to the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. He is someone that we can defeat easily. It is just going to waste your energy and digging your own grave! What you said is correct, we are all warriors from Heaven Realm and had become sworn enemies with Tong Tian tower. We came here for money so why bother sacrificing our lives here?” Captain Bai Ma felt that since they had already surrendered and exposed the deepest secrets, there was no turning back. Hence, he did not mind listening to the commands of Yue Yang. Most importantly, he knows the consequences of defying Yue Yang’s

orders.

“Yes, do not make things worse. The pride of being Heaven Rankers is nothing. If people do not want to give you face, yet you want it badly, that is much more shameless!” Hei Tu advised Captain Yong Hui to know his worth and try not to go against Yue Yang, unless he wanted to suffer greatly under Yue Yang’s hands.

“So what you meant is, you want a Level 4 Heaven Ranker like me to beg for his forgiveness?” Captain Yong Hui felt that something was amiss today.

Could he be dreaming?

If not, how could such ridiculous thing happened?

How did Zhong Guan appear in this water world, and why were all of them listening to the command of the enemy?

The thing that caused Captain Yong Hui to faint was that the three of them, Zhong Guan, Bai Ma and Hei Tu simultaneously said, “If you can do this, he will definitely accept your surrender.....”

“Spit, I’d rather die in a fight than surrender! I shall see for myself that who is going to kneel in front of who! With just three traitors you dare to fight against me?” Captain Yong Hui laughed, what was the use of three injured Level 2 Heaven Rankers? Even if they were not injured, Yong Hui would still be able to beat them up.

If this place did not restrict weapons and personal involvement, Yong Hui believed that he could heavily injure one of them in one move and finish these three traitors in a hundred moves.

Also, this was the water world which restricted his strongest power.

However, was not easy for three Heaven Rank Level 2 to fight against him..... A peak Heaven Rank Level 4 would always be stronger than three Heaven Rank Level 2.



Zhong Guan sighed slightly, “Let’s fight, let’s fight, I expected that matters would progress like this. Be careful, Hei Tu, you are not strong in water battles and if you are hit with the Yong Hui’s Light Speed Fangs, you will be dead!”

His words irritated Captain Yong Hui.

Yong Hui roared loudly, “Are all of you idiots? It is obvious that my powers are far ahead of you, yet you still want to listen to the enemy and fight against your own comrade?”

Captain Bai Ma cried, “You, you think we wanted to do this? We have no choice too, as compared to the torture from Yue Yang, that guy, we feel that fighting with you is safer. At least, there are chances for us to avoid the hits. Nevermind, I shall not say anything else, if I say any wrong word again, that guy would be able to find an excuse to beat me up.”

“.....” Captain Yong Hui was speechless, he had never seen such cowardly Heaven Rankers. Was he a Heaven Ranker or just some Heaven Realm Dwarf?

“Why are you all still bullshitting?” Yue Yang howled from the middle of nowhere.

“We will, we will fight now!” Hei Tu was petrified and quickly answered.

“.....” Captain Yong Hui was completely speechless, he thought in his heart that this guy was not a Heaven Ranker, he was simply a slave, a slave of the lowest rank, a slave that was not even equal with the dirt under his feet.

# Table of Contents

## [Long Live Summons](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601 – Refining, Tao Tie Blade](#)

[Chapter 602 – Yue Yang’s Three Great Codes](#)

[Chapter 603 – Not Surrendering? Beat Him Up!](#)

[Chapter 604 – Return To Heaven Realm](#)

[Chapter 605 – What! You Have A Summoning Grimoire?](#)

[Chapter 606 – Silver Grimoire VS Platinum Grimoire?](#)

[Chapter 607 – Inspect? Inspect Your Sister!](#)

[Chapter 608 – Embarrassing? You Are The One That Is Embarrassing!](#)

[Chapter 609 – Is It Luck ? or Is It Cheating ?](#)

[Chapter 610 – Are You Stealing Or Recruiting?](#)

[Chapter 611 – Big Sis](#)

[Chapter 612 – Powerful Enemies Are Like Cloud, Happy Occasions Are Impossible](#)

[Chapter 613 – Betrayal, Plague Dragon Nail](#)

[Chapter 614 – Dance In The Air, Spirit Petals](#)

[Chapter 615 – Man And Mirror Unite, One Hit Kill Master](#)

[Chapter 616 – As Mysterious As A Riddle](#)

[Chapter 617 – No Such Thing As The Craziest, But Only The Even Crazier](#)

[Chapter 618 – What A Bully!](#)

[Chapter 619 – Glowering, Looking At Each Other Helplessly](#)

[Chapter 620 – Hidden Beneath, Curing the Dragon Plague](#)

[Chapter 621 – An extremely wise decision](#)

[Chapter 622 – Three hundred billion gold bounty Mo Long](#)

[Chapter 623 – Hornless Dragon VS Heaven Silkworm](#)

[Chapter 624 – Undefeatable, Divine Beast’s Divine Will!](#)

[Chapter 625 – Traitor? Let him become dog food!](#)

[Chapter 626 – Goodbye](#)

[Chapter 627 – True Selflessness, Grasp Heart](#)

[Chapter 628 – A terrifying guess](#)

[Chapter 629 – Who could control fate?](#)

[Chapter 630 – Dangerous times, Disappearance Of The Ancient Seal](#)

[Chapter 631 – Meeting Of Old Friends? Test of Treachery](#)

[Chapter 632 – You are already dead!](#)

[Chapter 633 – Curse of the magic box](#)

[Chapter 634 – The Secret at the Bottom of the Lake](#)

[Chapter 635 – Hell Hydra](#)

[Chapter 636 – ‘Stand Straight’ and ‘Fortitude’](#)

[Chapter 637 – Pearls Falling Onto A Jade Plate](#)

[Chapter 638 – Next will be your turn!](#)

[Chapter 639 – Look, This Is Power Derived From Wrath](#)

[Chapter 640 – Sorry, I Too Hid My True Strength](#)

[Chapter 641 – Sunny Sunflower, Spirit of Radiance](#)

[Chapter 642 – Who Is Saving Who?](#)

[Chapter 643 – Want to talk about conditions? Bring it on!](#)

[Chapter 644 – Secrets, and more Secrets to Come.](#)

[Chapter 645 – Mutual Slaughter?](#)